

**CHRISTIANITY WAS ISLAM**

**OPEN LICENSE**

The author of this book hereby grants an open license to all interested parties to translate or reproduce this publication in any quantity desired, and to distribute it to any parties they may desire, so long as said reproduction remains a faithful and complete copy of the original without addition, deletion, modification, or any other changes whatsoever unless explicitly authorized in writing by the author. The author also reserves the right to deny this open license to any parties whom he deems have abused it in any way.

## CONTENTS

<b>Preface:</b> .....	4
<b>Introduction</b> .....	6
<b>Chapter One: The Truth about Christianity</b> .....	9
• Condensed History of the Bible .....	9
• The Covenant of GOD with Abraham.....	14
○ According to Christianity .....	14
○ The Covenant with GOD in Islam .....	22
○ The Sacrifice Son in Christianity .....	26
○ The Sacrifice Son in Islam .....	35
• Historical account of the Bible.....	40
• Original language of the New Testament .....	52
• The False doctrine of Original Sin.....	55
• The Bible denies divinity of Jesus.....	66
• Contradictions in the Old Testament.....	78
• Contradictions in the New Testament.....	83
• Jesus Christ in Islam .....	93
<b>Chapter Two: Prophecy of Prophet Mohammed in the Bible</b> .....	98
<b>Chapter Three: Scientific Miracles of Al-Quran</b> .....	119
<b>Chapter Four: Scientific Errors of the Bible</b> .....	134
<b>Chapter Five: Frequently asked questions about Islam</b> .....	138
<b>Referenced books:</b> .....	183

## **IN THE NAME OF ALLAH, THE MOST GRACIOUS, THE MOST MERCIFUL**

### **Preface**

In the name of ALLAH, the most beneficent, the most merciful. I give all thanks to Allah for His bounties and knowledge and that He has guided me to Islam. I also ask Allah almighty that He bestows his peace and blessings upon Muhammad and grant him the highest rewards and exalted stations in Heaven. Further, I ask Allah almighty that He grant His peace and blessings upon all of His prophets from the beginning of time, including Adam, Abraham, Noah, Moses, David, and Jesus, as well as all of the countless others, peace be upon them all, may their names be held in the highest honor for all time.

When I first started to wonder about the teachings of Christianity, I used to hear Muslim preachers and scholars say “Those who claim that Jesus Christ is GOD have no concrete evidence from the bible, they are just following conjecture, Jesus never claimed divinity, he always painted himself as a man and messenger (prophet) etc.” Considering the great number of followers of Christianity, I really was puzzled thinking how that was possible? So, one day I went out and bought my first King James Version of the bible and started examining the common verses put forward by Christian scholars to prove Jesus’ divinity and I was really surprised to find the texts these Christian scholars point out are deliberately picked out of context to support their alleged claims. However when theses referred texts are read in context, they provide the complete and correct messages in line with the teachings of Islam..

What shocked me the most was when I found out that there is not a single original gospel of Jesus in the whole world at all! The oldest alleged teachings of Jesus, The New Testament, are all translations and copies written In the Greek language some 350 years after Jesus was already gone. And every Christian person testifies that Jesus never spoke Greek, He is said to have spoken in Aramaic or Hebrew. Hence, if any Christian or a Jew wants to crosscheck his bible with the original, he is out of luck! There is no way of confirming if his religion is correct and that is unacceptable for any normal and sincere truth seeker.

The discussions I had with some Christian followers have given me an even more amazing reality that even the most educated man holding a PHD may not know that Muslims believe in Jesus Christ (PBUH) at all. And I said to myself “one of the Most easiest and noble way of calling people to the way of Allah is informing a Christian, who always taught Muslims never believed in Jesus (PBUH) at all, the contradictory reality that Muslims do actually honor, love and respect Jesus and that he is considered as one of the mightiest Prophets of God.”

This book is prepared to help any Muslim brothers and sisters, with no or little background knowledge of the Christian scriptures, become an expert in Judeo-Christian doctrine by the time they complete reading it.

Moreover this book is written aimed at clarifying the big misconception among our Christian and Jew brothers and sisters who had been misinformed of the astonishing truth about the covenant GOD made between himself, Abraham and his descendants after him.

I strongly recommend my Muslim brothers and sisters to master this book, if not use it as a reference, when inviting Christian friends and families to the right religion of Abraham, Islam.

Allah in Chapter 41 (Fussilat): verse 33 says “Who speaks better than one who calls to Allah, does good deeds and says ‘I am surely one of the Muslims.’?”

I feel that this book is best described as my own humble attempt at the compilation and collection of the lifelong works of many famous and knowledgeable scholars and writers listed in the referenced book section. My contribution to this book has probably been restricted to the collection of these works in one publication.

MUSTEFA ABEBE

E-mail: mustefa.abebe@yahoo.com

May 16, 2016

## INTRODUCTION

There is always one instant in your lifetime when your past experience pays you back by suddenly opening your eyes showing you how your previous way of doing your work was not the best way. That happens when you finally find the most effective way of doing your work.

I remember when a wealthy and famous engineer was interviewed on how he became to be so successful. He answered "Because I make the right decision" and when he was then asked how he makes the right decisions, he replied "Because of my experience" and when he finally was asked how he got the experience, he answered "Because I made wrong decisions." I still can't forget how he beautifully put the process of attaining success.

For me, that moment happened in Addis Ababa the capital of Ethiopia while I was heading back home. I saw two protestant Christian missionaries in the middle of the pedestrian creating havoc by intercepting people with flyers and preaching to the people passing by. I decided to discuss with them and just like the other days, I followed the same routine of explaining how the Bible has many contradictions and scientific errors, how Jesus never claimed divinity etc. They too tried their best to justify the errors and eventually run out of luck. But one of them spoke words that gave me the best and effective way of calling Christian followers to Islam. He said "Whatever the case, Islam is a fraud" when I asked him why he would say that after I had told him some of the scientific miracles of the Quran? He replied "Because Mohammed is the descendant of Abraham's other wife who was also a slave-woman and the covenant God made with Abraham can't pass through the son of a slave woman!"

That was the moment for me! I realized how ever impressed they could be about how you disregard their contradicting bible and explain the nobility of the glorious Quran, they have been brainwashed their whole life to automatically throw Islam away because Prophet Mohammed was the descendant of a handmaid woman. I did my research and I found out how the implication of the Covenant of God with Abraham defined in the bible is totally different from what they have been programmed to believe.

A couple of months passed and I met that missionary again and it was one of my happiest moment to find him speechless when I proved to him how both Abraham's sons and their descendants are legible to become spiritual leaders as long as they are righteous.

Since the day they can remember, Our Christian brothers and sisters have always been told or read that the Covenant God made with Abraham was meant to pass through his son, Isaac only, and not Ishmael, thus rejecting the message of Prophet Mohammed who was the descendant of Ishmael and follower of Prophet Abraham.

According to them, therefore, Mohammed (PBUH) whom the Muslims took as a Prophet is no more than a liar. Because, they say, Mohammed was the descendant of Ishmael and according to this one particular verse, Genesis 17:21, only Isaac is entitled to inherit the covenant as he was not born from a slave-woman as Ishmael was.

We hope the reader will learn a profound fact about what that Covenant of God with Abraham was all about and how this covenant has always been open for all descendants of Abraham and anyone else on the face of the earth who wish to enter the covenant with GOD by testifying his belief in the GOD of Abraham and proves to be righteous.

Although I started writing to clarify the misconception about God's Covenant with Abraham, I felt it was necessary that I should add more relevant topics so that most of the questions the reader may ask could be answered in this same book.

If you, the reader, are a Muslim I encourage you to learn the book yourself and encourage you to recommend this book to your Christian friends and families around.

And for the Christian reader, I sincerely apologize if you may find any of my texts offensive, my intention is to invite you back to the religion of Abraham, the only way to Paradise. If you are sincere and really want God to guide you to the truth, sincerely pray to God saying "O! You, the Creator of Everything we know and we don't know, Guide me to the right religion and give me the strength to follow it." And God will always answer the prayer of a sincere person.

**Definitions and Abbreviations Used:**

**Allah:** means God in Arabic language.

**Al-Quran:** The final Holy book God sent to mankind through Prophet Mohammed

**PBUH:** Peace and Blessings of God be Upon Him

**PBUT:** May Peace and Blessings of God be Upon Them

**C.E.:** Christian Era, It starts counting from the day Jesus was born.

**Soorah (Surah):** means “Chapter”, Example: Surah Meryem = Chapter of Mary



## CHAPTER ONE: THE TRUTH ABOUT CHRISTIANITY

### 1.1. CONDENSED HISTORY OF THE BIBLE:

**NOTE:** According to the Bible

- In 1875 B.C Abraham was ordered by God to leave his home town, Haran (Iraq) and move to Canaan (Palestine)
- In 1450 B.C Moses left Egypt with children of Israel to Palestine. And it was between 1450 -1400 B.C when Moses is said to have written the first 5 books (Genesis-Deuteronomy) (The Pentateuch) of the Old Testament.

#### Important terms to remember:

- **Autographs:** The original texts were written either by the author's own hand or by a scribe under their personal supervision.
- **Manuscripts:** Until Gutenberg first printed the Latin Bible in 1456, all Bibles were *hand copied* onto papyrus, parchment, and paper.
- **Translations:** When the Bible is translated into a different language, it was expected to be translated from the original Hebrew or Aramaic. However all translations of the bible were not originated from the originals as the originals of the entire bible does not exist anymore.

#### Autographs

There are no known autographs of any books of the Old Testament. Below is a list of the languages in which the Old Testament books were written.

- 1450-1400 B.C. The traditional date for Moses' writing of Genesis-Deuteronomy written in **Hebrew**.
- 586 B.C. Jerusalem was destroyed by the Babylonian king Nebuchadnezzar. The Jews were taken into captivity to Babylon (Iraq). They remained in Babylon under the Medo-Persian Empire and there began to speak **Aramaic**.
- 555-545 B.C. The Book of Daniel Chapters. 2:4 to 7:28 were written in **Aramaic**.
- 425 B.C. Malachi, the last book of the Old Testament, was written in **Hebrew**.
- 400 B.C. Ezra Chapters. 4:8 to 6:18; and 7:12-26 were written in **Aramaic**.

## Manuscripts

The following is a list of the oldest Hebrew manuscripts of the Old Testament ***that are still in existence***.

- ***The Dead Sea Scrolls***: date from 200 B.C. - 70 C.E. and contain the entire book of Isaiah and portions of every other Old Testament book except the book of Esther. Discovered in caves between 1946-1956 near the Dead Sea.

## Translations

The Old Testament was ***translated*** very early into ***Aramaic*** and ***Greek***.

- 400 B.C. The Old Testament began to be translated into Aramaic. This translation is called the ***Aramaic Targums***. This translation helped the Jewish people, who began to speak Aramaic from the time of their captivity in Babylon, to understand the Old Testament in the language that they commonly spoke. In the first century Palestine of Jesus' day, *Aramaic* was still the commonly spoken language. For example *maranatha*: "Our Lord has come," 1 Corinthians 16:22 is an example of an Aramaic word that is used in the New Testament.
- 250 B.C. The Old Testament was translated into Greek. This translation is known as the ***Septuagint***. It is sometimes designated "***LXX***" (which is Roman numeral for "70") because it was believed that 70 to 72 translators worked to translate the Hebrew Old Testament in Greek. The Septuagint was often used by New Testament writers when they quoted from the Old Testament. The ***LXX*** was translation of the Old Testament that was used by the early Church.

The following is a list of the oldest Greek ***LXX*** translations of the Old Testament ***that are still in existence***.

- ***Chester Beatty Papyri***: Contains nine Old Testament Books in the Greek Septuagint and dates between 100-400 C.E.
- ***Codex Vaticanus*** and ***Codex Sinaiticus*** each contain almost the entire Old Testament of the Greek Septuagint and they both date around 350 C.E.

**NOTE THAT:** Remember Moses is said to have written the first five books of the bible, commanded by God between 1450-1400 B.C and the oldest Hebrew manuscript ever to be found is ***The Dead Sea Scrolls*** dated from 200 B.C to 70 A.D more than 1200 years later and it contains only the book of Isaiah and fragments of the other books and the book of Esther is not included.

## THE OLDEST NEW TESTAMENT EVIDENCES:

### Autographs

Since Jesus either taught in Hebrew or Aramaic, any Gospel written in any other language including Greek is considered as a translation. The Greek gospels were written after the empire of Rome was divided in the 3<sup>rd</sup> century CE. No Autograph of the Gospels exists today.

### Manuscripts

There are over 5,600 early ***Greek Manuscripts*** of the New Testament ***that are still in existence***. And none of them are identical to one another and each of them either contains few verses of a book, fragments of a book or 2, 3 or 4 books combined. The oldest manuscripts were written on ***papyrus*** and the later manuscripts were written on leather called ***parchment***. And the following two are the oldest and almost complete manuscripts ever discovered until today.

- 350 C.E. ***Codex Sinaiticus*** contains the entire New Testament and almost the entire Old Testament in Greek. It was discovered by a German scholar Tischendorf in 1856 at an Orthodox monastery at Mount Sinai.
- 350 C.E. ***Codex Vaticanus***: is an almost complete New Testament. It was cataloged in the Vatican Library since 1475.

**NOTE:** The Oldest Gospels we have today are in Greek language and were written some 350 years after Jesus was gone. How reliable can that be?

### Translations

***Early translations*** of the New Testament can give important insight into the underlying Greek manuscripts from which they were translated.

- 180 C.E. Early translations of the New Testament from Greek into Latin, Syriac, and Coptic versions began about 180 C.E.
- 195 C.E. The name of the first translation of the Old and New Testaments *into Latin* was termed ***Old Latin***, both Testaments having been translated from the Greek. Parts of the ***Old Latin*** were found in

quotes by the church father Tertullian, who lived around 160-220 C.E. in north Africa and wrote treatises on theology.

- 300 C.E. **The Old Syriac** was a translation of the New Testament from the Greek into Syriac.
- 300 C.E. **The Coptic Versions**: Coptic was spoken in four dialects in Egypt. The Bible was translated into each of these four dialects.
- 380 C.E. **The Latin Vulgate** was translated by St. Jerome. He translated into Latin the Old Testament from the Hebrew and the New Testament from Greek. The Latin Vulgate became the Bible of the Western Church until the Protestant Reformation in the 1500's. It continues to be the authoritative translation of the Roman Catholic Church to this day. The Protestant Reformation saw an increase in translations of the Bible into the common languages of the people.
- Other early translations of the Bible were in Armenian, Georgian, and Ethiopic, Slavic, and Gothic.
- 1380 C.E. The **first English translation** of the Bible was by John Wycliffe. He translated the Bible into English from the Latin Vulgate. This was a translation from a translation and not a translation from the original Hebrew and Greek. Wycliffe was forced to translate from the Latin Vulgate because he did not know Hebrew or Greek.

## The Advent of Printing

***Printing greatly aided the transmission of the biblical texts.***

- 1456 C.E. **Gutenberg** produced the first printed Bible in Latin. Printing revolutionized the way books were made. From now on books could be published in great numbers and at a lower cost.
- 1514 C.E. The Greek New Testament was printed for the first time by **Erasmus**. He based his Greek New Testament from only five Greek manuscripts, the oldest of which dated only as far back as the twelfth century.
- 1522 A. D. **Polyglot Bible** was published. The Old Testament was in Hebrew, Aramaic, Greek, and Latin and the New Testament in Latin and Greek. Erasmus used the Polyglot to revise later editions of his New Testament. **Tyndale** made use of the Polyglot in his translation of the Old Testament into English which he did not complete because he was killed in 1534.
- 1611 C.E. The **King James Version** into English from the original Hebrew and Greek. The King James translators of the New Testament used the **Textus Receptus** as the basis for their translations.
- 1968 C.E. The **United Bible Societies 4th Edition of the Greek New Testament**. This Greek New Testament made use of the *oldest* Greek manuscripts which date from 175 C.E. This

was the *Greek* New Testament text from which the NASV and the NIV were translated.

- 1971 C.E. The ***New American Standard Version*** (NASV) was published. It makes use of the wealth of much older Hebrew and Greek manuscripts now available that weren't available at the time of the translation of the KJV.
- 1983 C.E. The ***New International Version*** (NIV) was published. It also made use of the oldest manuscript evidence
- 2011 A.D another revision of the NIV

## 1.2. THE COVENANT OF GOD WITH ABRAHAM:

The word "covenant" generally refers to an agreement, such as a treaty or contract.

### ACCORDING TO CHRISTIANITY:

#### STORY OF THE BIBLE:

Until he became 75 years old, Abraham was living in the land of Haran, Iraq of today. Abraham's father was an idol worshiper who owned a shop to sell idols of god. But Abraham always hated those false gods, idols, so much that one day while his father was gone, he destroyed his father's idols hoping his father would learn from his actions.

Then for the first time, GOD appears to Abraham and instructed him to go to the land of the Canaan and promised to BLESS him, the FAMILIES OF THE EARTH in him and make him a GREAT NATION.

#### Evidence:

- (Gen 12:2) And I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing
- (Gen 12:3) And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed.

Then 15 years later, when ABRAHAM was about 90 years old living in Canaan, GOD appeared to Abraham again to establish the so called controversial but an important covenant as you can see below.

#### Evidence:

- (Gen 17:7) And I will establish my covenant between me and thee and thy seed after thee in their generations for an everlasting covenant, ***to be a God unto thee, and to thy seed after thee.***

The verse clearly states that GOD is instructing Abraham that only HIM (GOD) must be worshiped by him (Abraham) and his descendants after him.

And the reason why GOD sent prophets one after another starting from our father Adam (PBUH) is to remind us, the son of Adam, that there is none worthy of worship except HE (GOD).

For example, the first of the Ten Commandments given to Prophet Moses at the Mount Sinai was also an instruction to worship GOD alone.

**Evidence:**

- (Exo 20:3) Thou (You) shall have no other gods before me.
- (Exo 20:4) Thou shall not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness *of anything* that *is* in heaven above, or that *is* in the earth beneath, or that *is* in the water under the earth.

Similarly JESUS too spoke of the first commandment referring it as the greatest commandment of all.

**Evidence:**

- (Mat 22:36) Master, which *is* the greatest commandment in the law?
- (Mat 22:37) Jesus said unto him, *Thou shall love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind.*

After the covenant was established between GOD and Abraham, GOD then instructed Abraham to circumcise himself and everyone around him as a sign of Witness or agreement. Which means who so ever is circumcised, acknowledges and believes in the GOD of Abraham that HE is the only one worthy of worship.

**Evidence:**

- (Gen 17:11) And ye shall circumcise the flesh of your foreskin; and ***it shall be a token of the covenant betwixt me and you.***
- (Gen 17:10) This *is* my covenant, which ye shall keep, between me and you and thy seed after thee; Every man child among you shall be circumcised.
- (Gen 17:12) And he that is eight days old shall be circumcised among you, every man child in your generations, he that is born in the house, or bought with money of ***any stranger, which is not of thy seed.***
- (Gen 17:23) And Abraham took ***Ishmael*** his son, and all that were born in his house, and all that were bought with his money, every male among the men of Abraham's house; and circumcised the flesh of their foreskin in the selfsame day, as God had said unto him.

No restriction was made by GOD as to who should be enrolled in the Covenant, because the Covenant is about acknowledging and obeying one's Creator or GOD. That is why GOD included the Slaves of Abraham to be circumcised too, because the GOD of the slaves is also the GOD of Abraham.

Such practices of witnesses after establishing Covenants have always been common in the bible.

For example: In Genesis 9:11-13: GOD made a promise (covenant) to Prophet Noah and every living creature in the world promising not to destroy the earth with flood again. And GOD set a RAINBOW in the cloud and that was taken as the Witness of the covenant.

**Evidence:**

God's covenant with Noah and the world was witnessed by the rainbow ([Genesis 9:12-16](#)).

- ([Gen 9:11](#)) And I will establish my covenant with you; neither shall all flesh be cut off any more by the waters of a flood; neither shall there anymore be a flood to destroy the earth.
- ([Gen 9:12](#)) And God said, This *is* the token of the covenant which I make between me and you and every living creature that *is* with you, for perpetual generations:
- ([Gen 9:13](#)) I do set my ***bow in the cloud***, and it shall be for a token of a covenant between me and the earth.

Similarly When Jacob and Laban settle their dispute or misunderstanding, the covenant between Jacob and Laban was witnessed by a Stone Marker.

**Evidence:**

- ([Gen 31:46](#)) And Jacob said unto his brethren, Gather stones; and they took stones, and made an heap: and they did eat there upon the heap.
- ([Gen 31:48](#)) And Laban said, ***This heap is a witness*** between me and thee this day. Therefore was the name of it called Galeed;

Since then all the descendants of Ishmael and Isaac are circumcised keeping the covenant that they believe in the GOD of Abraham.

**The Argument:**

We have seen how simple it is to understand what GOD's Covenant with Abraham was all about. If a man wants to believe and obey the GOD of Abraham, all what he has to do according to Christianity is to get himself circumcised and just like Abraham, the man establishes a covenant with GOD as well.

However, according to the Jews and Christians only Isaac was the son of promise and covenant. The following verses are frequently referenced.

- ([Genesis 17:21](#)) ***But my covenant will I establish with Isaac.***

If Genesis 17:21 is translated to mean that Isaac is one of the inheritors of my covenant, then we have no objection because it is in harmony with the meaning of the covenant in Gen 17:10.

However, if Genesis 17:21 is translated to mean that Isaac is the only inheritor of my covenant, Then those who claim so are in a really grave error. Because they are claiming that GOD doesn't want to be acknowledged and worshiped by anyone except by the descendants of Isaac. They also are revoking the right of an individual to believe in his own GOD.



These people are so biased that they have forgotten the promise of GOD to Abraham mentioned in Genesis 12:3 that HE would bless the families of the earth in Abraham. So, whoever believes and worships the GOD of Abraham will be blessed.

Moreover, it is enough to mention that in (Gen 17:20) GOD promised to bless Ishmael and make him a Great Nation as he promised to bless Abraham and make him a Great Nation in (Gen 12:2)

- (Gen 17:20) And as for Ishmael, I have heard thee: Behold, I have blessed him, and will make him fruitful, and will multiply him exceedingly; twelve princes shall he beget, and I will make him a great nation.

Those Christian brothers and sisters who are stubborn in believing that the Covenant was only meant to be passed through Isaac are trying to support their belief in Jesus Christ who was a descendant of Isaac. However the reality and the simple truth about the Covenant GOD made with Abraham can never change; it was to establish the belief in the GOD of Abraham. Nothing More or Less!. That is why Jesus confirmed saying “to Love your Lord with all your heart and with all your soul and mind is the GREATEST commandment of all”. It is based on this truth and understanding that the Holy Bible must be read.

In the section ‘ The Bible Denies the Divinity of Jesus’, will put forth many biblical evidences where Jesus Christ never claimed to be GOD but that he always reminded himself and the people of Israel to worship the one and only one GOD of Abraham. Our point must be clear that GOD’s covenant with Abraham was to remind every family of the earth that no one came into being by himself, every living creature in this world and the world we don’t know of are all the property of one GOD alone and He is the only one who should be worshiped.

That is why GOD told Abraham that who so ever doesn’t circumcise, has broken my Covenant! Or in another way “If he doesn’t circumcise, then He has denied ME to be his GOD!” This shows how universal the Covenant was.

#### **Evidence:**

- (Gen 17:14) And the uncircumcised man child whose flesh of his foreskin is not circumcised, that soul shall be cut off from his people; he hath broken my covenant.

Now let us see how GOD promised Ishmael to bless and make him into a Great Nation confirming his inheritance of the covenant.

## PROOF THAT ISHMAEL ALSO INHERITED

In that same conversation and day of the Covenant, GOD told Abraham that HE has BLESSED ISHMAEL and Promised to make him into a GREAT NATION.

### Evidence:

- (Gen 17:20) And as for Ishmael, I have heard thee: Behold, *I have blessed him*, and will *make him fruitful*, and will *multiply him exceedingly*; twelve princes shall he beget, and *I will make him a great nation*.

As you can read from the verse above, GOD made the following four (4) important covenants (promises) to Ishmael

1. GOD Blessed Ishmael
2. GOD will make ISHMAEL a GREAT NATION.
3. GOD will make ISHMAEL FRUITFUL, and
4. GOD will Multiply him exceedingly

Let us then understand the intention of GOD in accordance with the biblical evidence.

### 1. BLESSEDNESS OF ISHMAEL:

According to PSALM 33:12 Blessedness is defined as one who has GOD as his Lord and that who is chosen to inherit God's religion.

### Evidence:

- (Psa 33:12) Blessed is the nation whose God is the LORD; *and* the people *whom* he hath chosen for his own inheritance.

We learn from the above verse that when GOD says he has blessed someone or a Nation, He means that that nation has been chosen by GOD to inherit the faith and believe in HIM. Therefore when GOD Blessed ISHMAEL, He automatically was chosen to inherit the covenant.

Next to the verse where Ishmael was said to be blessed, GOD also promised to Bless Sarah, to give her a son and to also make her a mother of nations of kings.

### Evidence:

- (Gen 17:16) And I will bless her, and give thee a son also of her: yea, I will bless her, and she shall be *a mother* of nations; kings of people shall be of her.

And we all know the promise of Sarah was all fulfilled. Because GOD blessed her, Sarah became the mother of many prophets and kings like Prophet David and Prophet Solomon.

And therefore, when GOD blessed Ishmael he, too, inherited the covenant and Ishmael was responsible to pass the religion of his father, Abraham, to his ancestors all the way to prophet

Mohammed (PBUH). And as I sign of keeping this covenant, every Muslim, 1.7 Billion of them, around the world are circumcised testifying their firm believes in the GOD of Abraham who is the only one worthy of worship.

## **2. GREAT NATION OF ISHMAEL:**

GREATNESS according to GOD is not mere increase in Number. The criterion of Greatness in the eyes of GOD is founded in FAITH, SPIRITUAL INHERITANCE & SPIRITUAL LEADERSHIP.

In fact Moses defined what 'GREAT NATION' means in Deuteronomy 4:7 & 4:8 as followed:

(Deu 4:7) For what nation *is there so* great, who *has* God *so* near unto them, as the LORD our God *is* in all *things that* we call upon him *for*?

(Deu 4:8) And what nation *is there so* great, that has statutes and judgments so righteous as all this law, which I set before you this day?

Therefore, GREAT NATION according to Prophet Moses, in the above verse is defined as

- A Nation who has GOD close to them as Moses and his followers were during their prayers. And
- A Nation who received divine DECREES & LAWS as the followers of Moses received directly through him.

And the Muslim Nation has received Divine Decree and Laws called The Holy Quran through the descendant of Ishmael, Prophet Mohammed in the land of Arabia as a mercy and guidance for the whole of humanity. And just as Moses said, the nation of Ishmael i.e. The Muslims are the most practical and obedient religious members when compared to other members of religions.

The Muslim nation around the world prostrate on the ground a minimum of 17 times a day during the daily five time prayers bringing them closest to GOD every day and every hour. And the closest moment a human being can ever become with God is when we prostrate with our forehead on the ground submitting ourselves to God.

## **3. ISHMAEL THE FRUITFUL**

FRUITFUL is one who multiplies its numbers and propagates its faith to many.

The fact that Islam is the top most widely spread religion in the face of the earth despite their false allegation that it was spread by sword is a proof that the faith of prophet Ishmael was fruitful through his descendant, prophet Mohammed (PBUH).

Because of the rebellions of Jews by either killing prophets sent to them or rejecting or worshiping other gods after they received the truth, they were hated and despised by their own prophets too.

Here is what Jesus (PBUH) once said to the Jews:

**Evidence:**

- (Mat 23:37) O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, *thou* that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under *her* wings, and ye would not!

Because of their being stubborn and unwillingness to submit to GOD, their spiritual leadership was finally taken away from them and as GOD promised, then the spiritual leadership was given to the descendant of Ishmael. And the only Prophet who is the descendant of Ishmael is Mohammed (PBUH).

This is how Jesus put it:

Jesus said to the Jews: "Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the **fruits** thereof. (From the KJV Bible, Matthew 21:43)" And obviously the descendants of Ishmael, the Arabs, are the only known NATION who believe in the GOD of Abraham.

The Message of Ishmael which he inherited from his father Abraham was again inherited by Prophet Mohammed. Mohammed was all alone when he started the message despite the persecution of the tribal and world leaders but because GOD promised Ishmael that he would make him fruitful, indeed the GOD's promise is fulfilled as Mohammed's call to the GOD of Abraham was fruitful and successful. As of today, the sum of all the denominations of Christianity comprise 31.5% of world's population and Muslims are 24%

#### **4. ISHMAEL MULTIPLIED IN NUMBER:**

Ishmael was all alone with his Mother in the wilderness when Abraham left them, then as you can see, today that desert is now filled with the descendants of Ishmael. Hence the promise of GOD has been fulfilled.

**NOTE:** It is important to remind our readers how GOD was always with Ishmael even before he was born. We all remember the story when Sarah found out that Hagar was pregnant she became very hard on Hagar and because of this Hagar left to the wilderness. An Angel of GOD then came and comforted her informing her, the name of the unborn child and that God heard her affliction.

**Evidence:**

- (Gen 16:8) And he said, Hagar, Sarai's maid, whence camest thou? And whither wilt thou go? And she said, I flee from the face of my mistress Sarai.
- (Gen 16:10) And the angel of the LORD said unto her, I will multiply thy seed exceedingly, that it shall not be numbered for multitude.
- (Gen 16:11) And the angel of the LORD said unto her, Behold, thou *art* with child, and shalt bear a son, and shalt call his name Ishmael; because the LORD hath heard thy affliction.

Then later when Abraham left Sarah and her infant son, Ishmael, in the place where there was no water or food to eat from, GOD sent an Angel and brought forth water under the feet of Ishmael.

The fact that the angel of GOD named Ishmael and protected him from dying out of water and food shows us how important, blessed and divine Ishmael was to GOD.

According to Wikipedia, in 2006 countries with a Muslim majority had an average population rate of 1.8% per year. This compares with a world population growth rate of 1.1% per year. As of 2011, it is predicted that the world's Muslim population will grow twice as fast as non-Muslims over the next 20 years. BY 2030, Muslims will make up more than a quarter of the global population. If the current trend continues, it is predicted by the 2100 that about 1% more of the world's population will be Muslim (35%) than Christians (34%). Globally, Muslims have the greatest fertility rate, an average of 3.1 children per woman and Christians are the second.

Those who insist that Genesis 17:21 must not include Ishmael but Isaac are either biased Jews who rejected Prophet Mohammed out of tribal jealousy as he was not from the descendant of Isaac or are some misguided Christians who, in their entire life, were taught to believe that mankind inherited sin from Adam and that only the sacrifice of Jesus cleanses them. Have you ever heard of any religion which doesn't want and doesn't encourage the conversion of other faith followers to theirs? Well there is none except Judaism! The Jews never surrender the leadership of other tribe! They are too pride that they killed prophets of God, rejected some of them and when Prophet Mohammed came from the descendant of Ismael, they were too arrogant and proud to follow him although many of them moved to live around Medina waiting for the coming of the last prophet prophesized by the previous prophets. When some acknowledged and followed Prophet Mohammed, many of them deliberately rejected him exchanging this world for the next.

In the subsequent chapters, we will expose how the inheritance of Sin is a completely contradictory doctrine with the teaching of the bible. People are just quoting texts out of context to justify their claim.

## **THE COVENANT WITH GOD: ACCORDING TO ISLAM**

Like the Judeo-Christian scriptures, the Quran speaks of a covenant with Allah (God).

The Quran describes a covenant with God as having three general features: the remembrance of God's favor, a promise of reward, and commandments to be followed. The Quran teaches that GOD has made a general covenant with all of humanity and specific Covenants with his prophets and messengers.

However, before we go describing the details of what the Islamic teachings about the covenants of GOD say, we would like to first clarify the big misconception which some people who are not familiar with Islam think. They think Islam was, for the first time, introduced by Prophet Mohammed. And it is a totally wrong knowledge.

Allah tells us that all prophets of Allah (God) beginning from our father Adam, Noah, Abraham, Ishmael, Isaac, Moses, David, Solomon, Jesus and Mohammed were all chosen by GOD as his messengers and prophets to teach people of their time saying "If you want to be in peace and successful both in this and the next life, then submit yourself to the one and only one GOD" or simply this teaching of the prophets, in Arabic, is called ISLAM. The prophets were teaching Islam. Prophet Mohammed told us that Allah (GOD) has sent 124,000 prophets and messengers starting from our father Adam (PBUH) until the last and final messenger, Prophet Mohammed himself.

Therefore Allah (GOD) tells us that all of HIS prophets were in Peace, because they all submitted their life to HIM. Or in another word all of them were followers of Islam and the follower of Islam is called a Muslim (one who submitted his will to the pleasure of GOD or Allah).

Therefore Islam is the religion ALLAH chose for humanity and Prophet Mohammed is only the last and the final messenger sent as a mercy and blessing for the whole of mankind.

### **Evidence:**

- [Al Quran 16:36] And verily, We have sent among every Ummah (community, nation) a Messenger (proclaiming): "Worship Allah (Alone), and avoid (or keep away from) Taghut (all false deities, etc. i.e., do not worship Taghut besides Allah)." Then of them were some whom Allah guided and of them were some upon whom the straying was justified. So travel through the land and see what was the end of those who denied (the truth).
- [Al Quran 40:78] And, indeed We have sent Messengers before you (O Muḥammad); of some of them We have related to you their story and of some We have not related to you their story, and it was not given to any Messenger that he should bring a sign except

by the Leave of Allah. So, when comes the Commandment of Allah, the matter will be decided with truth, and the followers of falsehood will then be lost. (Qur'ân 40:78)

- [Al-Baqerah 2:136 ] Say, [O believers], "We have believed in Allah and what has been revealed to us and what has been revealed to Abraham and Ishmael and Isaac and Jacob and the Descendants and what was given to Moses and Jesus and what was given to the prophets from their Lord. We make no distinction between any of them, and we are Muslims [in submission] to Him."
- [ Al Anbiyaa :107] "We have not sent you (O Mohammed) but as a mercy for the whole of mankind. "

These prophets of GOD were all sent by Allah (GOD) to help us defeat the evil forces and our whims so that we can keep the covenant (promise) we made to Allah (GOD) while we were in a spirit state, before we came to this world (earth) testifying we would worship HIM alone.

### **GOD'S COVENANT WITH HUMANITY:**

Islam teaches that the root of all of humanity's sacred obligations and afterlife rewards is God's covenant with all humanity. Allah (God) brought forth the spirits of all humanity from Adam's newly created body and when Allah asked "all the children of Adam" whether HE is their sovereign, we all responded by taking an oath and agreeing that he was indeed our God and creator and pledged to worship and submit to HIM during our life time. This constitutes the first divine covenant. Moreover Allah has, specifically, taken a covenant from his Prophets as well.

#### **Evidence:**

- Prophet Mohammed (SAW) said that when Allah created Aadam, HE took a covenant from him in a place called Na'maan on the day of 'Arafah, then He extracted from him all of his descendants who would be born until the end of the world, generation after generation, and spread them out in front of Him in order to take a covenant from them also. HE spoke to them face to face saying: "Am I not your Lord?" and they all replied, "Yes, we testify to it." Allaah then explained why HE had all of mankind bear witness that HE was their creator and only true God worthy of worship. HE said, "That was in case you (mankind) should say on the Day of Resurrection, "Surely we were unaware of all this. We had no idea that You, Allaah, were our God. No one told us that we were only supposed to worship You." Allaah went on to explain that it was also in case you should say: "It was our ancestors who made other GOD Partners (with Allaah) and we are only their descendants; will You, then destroy us for what those liars did?" This was the Prophet's (SAW) explanation of the Qur'anic verse in which Allaah said:

"When your Lord drew forth from the loins of the children of Aadam, their descendants and made them

testify concerning themselves. (Saying): 'Am I not your Lord' They said, 'Yes, we testify to it.' (This) in case you say on the Day of Judgement, 'We were unaware of this'. Or in case you say, 'It was our ancestors who made partners (with Allaah) and we are only their descendants. Will you then destroy us for what those liars did?'  
[Soorah al-A'raaf, 7:172-3]

The verse and prophetic explanation confirm the fact that everyone is responsible for belief in God and on the Day of Judgment excuses will not be accepted. Every human being has the belief in God imprinted on his soul and Allaah shows every idolator (false GOD worshiper) during the course of his life, signs that his idol is not God. Hence, every sane human being is required to believe in God beyond His creation and not manifest in it.

Since Allaah made all human beings swear to His Godhood when He created Adam, this oath is printed on the human soul even before it enters the fetus in the fifth month of pregnancy. So when a child is born, it has with it a natural belief in Allaah. This natural belief is called in Arabic the "Fitrah"

If the child were left alone, it would grow up aware of Allaah in His unity, but all children are affected by the pressures of their environment whether directly or indirectly. That is why Allah (GOD) keeps sending righteous people among us called prophets and messengers one after the other so that they can help us win our negative environmental forces which keep challenging us to forget Allah (God), follow our whims and eventually worship false gods.

That is why The Prophet (SAW) reported that Allaah said, " I created MY servants in the right religion but the devils made them go astray."

The Prophet (SAW) also said, "Each child is born in a state of "Fitrah", but his parents make him a Jew or a Christian. It is like the way an animal gives birth to a normal offspring. Have you noticed any (young animal) born mutilated before you mutilate them?" So, just as the child's body submits to the physical laws which Allaah has put in nature, its soul also submits naturally to the fact that Allaah is its Lord and Creator. But its parents try to make it follow their own way and the child is not strong enough in the early stages of its life to resist or oppose its parents.

The religion which the child follows at this stage is one of custom and upbringing and Allaah does not hold it to account or punish it for this religion. When the child matures in youth and clear proofs of the falsehood of its religion are brought to it, the adult must now follow the religion of knowledge and reason." At this point the devils try their best to encourage him to stay as he is or to go further astray. Evils are made pleasing to him and he must now live in the midst of a struggle between his Fitrah and his desires in order to find the right road. If he chooses his Fitrah Allaah will help him overcome his desires even though it may take most of his



life to escape, for many people enter Islaam in their old age although most tend to do so before that.

Because of all these powerful forces fighting against the Fitrah, Allaah chose certain righteous men and revealed to them clearly the right path in life. These men whom we call prophets were sent to help our Fitrah defeat its enemies. All the truths and good practices present in societies around the world today came from their teachings, and if it were not for their teachings, there would be no peace or safety in the world at all. For example, the laws of most Western countries are based on the "Ten Commandments" of Prophet Moses, like "Thou shalt not steal" and "Thou shalt not kill" etc., even though they claim to be "secular" governments, free from the influence of religion.

Thus, it is man's duty to follow the way of the prophets since it is the only way which is truly in harmony with his nature. He should also be very careful not to do things simply because his parents and their parents did it, especially if knowledge reaches him that these practices are wrong. If he does not follow the truth, he will be like those misguided people about whom Allaah says in The Qur'aan,

"If they are told to follow what Allaah has revealed, they say: 'No, we will continue to follow what we found our fore parents doing!' Even though their foreparents did not comprehend anything nor were they rightly guided."  
[Soorah Al-Baqarah 2:170]

Allaah forbids us from obeying our parents if what they want us to do is against the way of the prophets. He said, in the Qur'aan,

**Evidence:**

- "We advise man to be good to his parents, but if they try to make you do in MY name what you know to be false, do not obey them." [Soorah Al -'Ankaboot29:8]

So according to Islam, Allah is telling us that " Although the Gospel preached by Prophet Jesus (PBUH) and the Torah preached by prophet Moses were all sent from Allah (God), They were meant for the people of Israel of that time only and that these scriptures are now corrupted by the writings of men teaching false Gods other than ME." Therefore Allah tells us that those who follow these corrupted scriptures is following false Gods and have broken HIS Covenant.

Therefore, By way of contrast, God's covenant with the prophet Muhammad and his followers is true and complete, calling believers back to the original divine covenant by reminding them of God's benevolence, teaching them his commandments, and promising the reward of paradise and forgiveness of sins for all who obey.

---

## THE SACRIFICE SON, ISAAC OR ISHMAEL?

### ACCORDING TO CHRISTIANITY:

The other frequently debated topic is about which son of Abraham was presented for sacrifice. Let us investigate the biblical sources.

Abraham was first married to Sarah who happened to be a barren woman and bore him no children.

#### Evidence:

- (Gen 16:1) Now Sarai Abram's wife bare him no children: and she had a handmaid, an Egyptian, whose name was Hagar.

Later in the book of Genesis (16:2) we are told that Sarah gave Abraham a handmaid (Hagar) to be his wife, in the hope that she may bear a child to Abraham.

#### Evidence:

- (Gen 16:2) And Sarai said unto Abram, Behold now, the LORD hath restrained me from bearing: I pray thee, go in unto my maid; it may be that I may obtain children by her. And Abram hearkened to the voice of Sarai.

And Hagar did indeed bear Abraham's first child, and the Angels of God told Hagar to name him Ishmael (Gen 16:11), which means **God Hears**.

#### Evidence:

- (Gen 16:11) And the angel of the LORD said unto her, Behold, thou *art* with child, and shalt bear a son, and shalt call his name Ishmael; because the LORD hath heard thy affliction.

Clearly, this is a *divine child* as God is *intervening* and *sending angels* down to name him; this is a clear indication that the child is *divine* and *important*. Moreover, we are told in Genesis (21:20) that, **God was with the boy as he grew up**.

#### Evidence:

- (Gen 21:20) And God was with the lad; and he grew, and dwelt in the wilderness, and became an archer.

Ishmael, the firstborn child is very important. As a matter of fact, this is indeed consistent with the bible. In Hebrew traditions, the first-born son is to have double portions of honor, even inheritance and that right *is not changed* by the status of his mother. For example in

(Deuteronomy 21:15-17) we are reminded that a firstborn son is to be given a double share of inheritance regardless of the circumstances since the first born is the first sign of his father's strength.

**Evidence:**

- (Deu 21:15) If a man have two wives, one beloved, and another hated, and they have born him children, *both* the beloved and the hated; and *if* the firstborn son be hers that was hated:
- (Deu 21:16) Then it shall be, when he maketh his sons to inherit *that* which he hath, *that* he may not make the son of the beloved firstborn before the son of the hated, *which is indeed* the firstborn:
- (Deu 21:17) But he shall acknowledge the son of the hated *for* the firstborn, by giving him a double portion of all that he hath: for he *is* the beginning of his strength; the right of the firstborn *is* his.

For the next 14 years, Ishmael was Abraham's **only son**. Later, Abraham's first wife Sarah bears him a son, Isaac. And Ishmael was already 14 years old when Isaac was born.

Then, the question we should ask is why then the Christian and Jewish believe Isaac to be the son Abraham took to sacrifice? Let us see the biblical evidences used by them to support their claim.

GOD always tests the faith of his believer with what the believer loves most. And because Abraham loved his **only son** so much, GOD tested Abraham by commanding him to sacrifice the **only son** he had.

**Evidence:**

- (Gen 22:2) And he said, take now your son, **your only son** \_\_\_\_\_, whom you love, and get thee into the land of Moriah; and offer him there for a burnt offering upon one of the mountains which I will tell thee of.

The important question is who was this **only son** of Abraham that was offered for sacrifice? Ishmael the eldest son or Isaac the second son? The Bible writers have placed the name of Isaac in the blank space above. Muslims believe Ishmael was around thirteen years old when Abraham was asked to sacrifice him. In the above quotation the Lord uses the word **your only son**. Obviously, the **logical answer** is that the incident must have taken place **before** the birth of Isaac, the second son of Abraham. So, what could be the reason that the name of Isaac appears in the blank space, as the **only son** of Abraham? Bible scholars explain that **anomaly** by putting forward the following argument.

**The Argument** is that because Ishmael was born from a handmaid and not from a wife of Abraham, he would qualify as a seed or a descendant of Abraham, but not as a son to inherit the spiritual leadership or covenant of God.

**NOTE:** This argument is false for the following two (2) reasons:

### **REASON ONE (1):**

#### **Jesus too was born from prostitutes, handmaid & incest generation**

If in the ancestor of Jesus Christ, handmaid and children born of prostitutions and incest are included, then why can't Ishmael, a son born by the permission of Sarah, be called a Son???

#### **Evidence:**

- (Mat 1:1) The book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham.
- (Mat 1:3-6) And to Judah were born Perez and Zerah by Tamar; and to Perez was born Hezron; and to Hezron, Ram; and to Ram was born Amminadab; and to Amminadab, Nahshon; and to Nahshon, Salmon; and to Salmon was born Boaz by Rahab; and to Boaz was born Obed by **Ruth**; and to Obed, Jesse; and to Jesse was born David the king. And to David was born Solomon by her who had been the wife of Uriah

Ruth, who was the grandmother of David, was a handmaid.

#### **Evidence:**

- (Rth 3:9) And he said, who are you? And she answered, ***I am Ruth your handmaid:*** spread therefore thy skirt over your handmaid; for you are a near kinsman.

Ruth is also the descendant of Moabites. The biblical story tells us that when same sex perversion was wide spread in the time of Prophet Lot, the nephew of Prophet Abraham. GOD instructed LOT to leave his town with his family. GOD then destroyed the whole city, Sodom and Gomorrah.

#### **Evidence:**

(Gen 19:24) Then the LORD rained upon Sodom and upon Gomorrah brimstone and fire from the LORD out of heaven;

The bible then tells us that the two daughters of Prophet Lot got their father, Lot, drunk with wine and alternately made sexual intercourse with their father Lot. The two daughters then gave birth to Sons and now the descendants of their sons are called Moabites (From the elder daughter) and Ammonites (From the younger daughter).

#### **Evidence:**

- (Gen 19:30) And Lot went up out of Zoar, and dwelt in the mountain, and his two daughters with him; for he feared to dwell in Zoar: and he dwelt in a cave, he and his two daughters.
- (Gen 19:31) And the firstborn said unto the younger, Our father *is* old, and *there is* not a man in the earth to come in unto us after the manner of all the earth:
- (Gen 19:32) Come, let us make our father drink wine, and we will lie with him, that we may preserve seed of our father.
- (Gen 19:33) And they made their father drink wine that night: and the firstborn went in, and lay with her father; and he perceived not when she lay down, nor when she arose.
- (Gen 19:34) And it came to pass on the morrow, that the firstborn said unto the younger, Behold, I lay yesternight with my father: let us make him drink wine this night also; and go thou in, *and* lie with him, that we may preserve seed of our father.
- (Gen 19:35) And they made their father drink wine that night also: and the younger arose, and lay with him; and he perceived not when she lay down, nor when she arose.
- (Gen 19:36) Thus were both the daughters of Lot with child by their father.
- (Gen 19:37) And the firstborn bare a son, and called his name **Moab**: the same *is* the father of the **Moabites** unto this day.
- (Gen 19:38) And the younger, she also bare a son, and called his name Benammi: the same *is* the father of the children of **Ammon** unto this day.

According to the bible, the grandmother of Prophet David, Ruth, is the descendant of the incest generation of Moabites, descendant of Prophet Lot and his Elder daughter.

#### Evidence:

- (Rth 1:4) And they took them wives of the women of Moab; the name of the one was Orpah, and the name of the other Ruth: and they dwelled there about ten years.

Therefore, according to the belief of Christianity, if the alleged GOD (Jesus) of this world and many prophets were born from handmaids, result of prostitutions and incest or family sex, then why would Ishmael who was born from the alleged handmaid wife be prevented from being a son when in fact Sarah herself approved Hagar and married her to be Abraham's wife?

#### Evidence:

- (Gen 16:3) And Sarai Abram's wife took Hagar her maid the Egyptian, after Abram had dwelt ten years in the land of Canaan, and gave her to her husband **Abram to be his wife**.

And moreover the biblical passage below tells us that Ishmael never lost his status as a son, not even after the birth of Isaac. If Ishmael had lost the status, the Lord would not have used the word sons in the following verse when Abraham died.

**Evidence:**

- (Gen 25:9) And **his sons Isaac and Ishmael** buried him in the cave of Machpelah, in the field of Ephron the son of Zohar the Hittite, which *is* before Mamre;

And again,

For example, when one traces the maternal side of the children of Israel, Genesis tells us that Jacob (later called Israel Gen 32:28) had four wives. He married Leah (Gen 29:22-23), Rachel (Gen 29:28), a slave-girl Bilhah (Gen 30:4), and another slave-girl Zilpah (Gen 30:9). From these **four wives** came **the twelve Children of Israel: Reuben, Simeon, Levi, Judah, Issachar, Zebulun, Joseph, Benjamin, Dan, Naphtali, Gad and Asher** (Gen 35:23-26 & 1 Chronicles 2:1-2). All twelve of these children make up the Israelites and are **all** referred as a combined group, see (Exodus 1:1-9).

Four of the twelve children (**Gad, Dan, Naphtali and Asher**) were sons of the slave-girls. **Thus, it follows that about one third of all Israelis are children of slave-girls!** Will a third of all Jews stand up and say they are illegitimate?

**If the son of a maidservant of questionable heritage could have the honor of being the progenitor and forbearer of the most important lines of descent for both Jews and Christians, then why cannot Ishmael, a son of a handmaid, be offered by his father for a burnt offering as his only son?**

Moreover, this argument cannot be correct because if it were, Sarah would have never said. (Gen 16:2) **The Lord has kept me from having children. Go, sleep with my maidservant; perhaps I can build a family through her. Abraham agreed. It is certain that Sarah and Abraham knew the law and did not want to waste their time during their old age building an illegitimate family that would serve them no good!**

So, is it out of tribal rivalry that the descendants of Isaac (Jews) are concealing these facts and depriving the preeminence due to the descendants of Ishmael (Arabs)? In Encyclopaedia Judaica Jerusalem, volume 9, under the heading Ishmael it is written:

"It is related that a renowned traditionalist of Jewish origin, from Qurayza tribe and another Jewish scholar who converted to Islam, told Caliph Omar ibn Abd al-Aziz (717-20) that the Jews were well informed that Ismail (Ishmael) was the one who was bound (sacrificed), but they concealed this out of jealousy."

**NOTE: Even the Bible admits how Jews tampered with scripture.**

**Evidence:**

- (Jeremiah 8:8 RSV) How can you say, we are wise, we have the law of the LORD, when scribes with their lying pens have falsified it?

## **REASON TWO (2):**

### **INCONCISTENCY WITH THE AGE OF ISMAEL (17 years old or a little child?)**

When the command of Sarah to cast out Ishmael and his Mother out of jealousy because of the alleged mockery of Isaac by Ishmael is examined in context with other verses of this same book, it becomes obvious that the Ishmaelite were included in God's promise and his covenant with Abraham.

The bible tells us that when Sarah found out that Hagar was pregnant, she became very hard and harsh on her so Hagar left to a fountain place in the wilderness and after an angel approached her and comforted her by the good news of Ishmael she went back home to Sarah.

But again for the second time when Ishmael was about 17 years old age young boy and Isaac was about 2 or 3 years old child, Sarah commanded Abraham to cast out Hagar and Ishmael in to the desert because of what she considered mockery on the part of Ishmael toward his younger brother Isaac while they were playing together.

#### **Evidence:**

- (Gen 21:8) And the child grew, and was weaned: and Abraham made a great feast the *same* day that Isaac was weaned.
- (Gen 21:9) And Sarah saw the son of Hagar the Egyptian, which she had born unto Abraham, **mocking**.
- (Gen 21:10) Wherefore she said unto Abraham, Cast out this bondwoman and her son: for the son of this bondwoman shall not be heir with my son, *even* with Isaac.

This incident took place after Isaac was weaned. Abraham obeyed his wife Sarah whose demand of casting out the slave woman and her son was blessed by GOD who told Abraham (Gen 21:12) to listen to Sarah.

#### **Evidence:**

- (Gen 21:12) And God said unto Abraham, Let it not be grievous in thy sight because of the lad, and because of thy bondwoman; in all that Sarah hath said unto thee, hearken unto her voice; for in Isaac shall thy seed be called.

One may wonder at this point why there should be only one child as the heir of the divine promise? Why not both sons in view of the evidence discussed already? What type of divine

justice punishes the rites of the firstborn to satisfy Sarah's ego and bless her jealously? [Was Sarah dictating her desires to God, too?](#)

One morning Abraham rose up, gave provisions, water and Ishmael to Hagar, and left them in the wilderness of Beer Sheba in Southern Palestine.

#### Evidence:

- [\(Gen 21:14\)](#) And Abraham rose up early in the morning, and took bread, and a bottle of water, and gave *it* unto Hagar, putting *it* on her shoulder, and the child, and sent her away: and she departed, and wandered in the wilderness of Beersheba.

#### ANALYSIS OF THE EVENT:

Was Ishmael and Hagar sent to the desert [before or after the birth of Isaac?](#)

If we were to accept the Biblical version, we would encounter a number of inconsistencies and contradictions. It is clear from the story in Gen. 21:14-19 that Ishmael was a [little baby](#) at that time.

For example according to Gen. 16:16 Abraham was 86 years old when Ishmael was born. And according to Gen. 21:5 Abraham was one hundred years old when Isaac was born. It follows that Ishmael was already fourteen years old when his younger brother Isaac was born. According to Gen. 21:8-19 the incident (Mockery of Isaac by Ishmael) took place after Isaac was weaned. Biblical scholars tell us the child was probably weaned at about the age of three. Thus, it follows that when Hagar and Ishmael were taken away Ishmael was a full-grown teenager, seventeen years old. **However, the profile of Ishmael in Gen 21:14-19 is a small baby and not a full-grown teenager. Why?**

#### Evidence: [\(Gen 21:14-21\)](#)

- [\(Gen 21:14\)](#) Early next morning Abraham took some food and a full water-skin and gave them to Hagar. He set the child on her shoulder and sent her away, and she wandered about in the wilderness of Beersheba.
- [\(Gen 21:15\)](#) When the water in the skin was finished, she thrust the child under a bush,
- [\(Gen 21:16\)](#) then went and sat down some way off, about a bowshot distant. How can I watch the child die? she said, and sat there, weeping bitterly.
- [\(Gen 21:17\)](#) God heard the child crying, and the angel of God called from heaven to Hagar, What is the matter, Hagar? Do not be afraid: God has heard the child crying where you laid him.
- [\(Gen 21:18\)](#) Go, lift the child and hold him in your arms, because I shall make of him a great nation.



- (Gen 21:19) Then God opened her eyes and she saw a well full of water; she went to it, filled the water-skin, and gave the child a drink.
- (Gen 21:20) God was with the child as he grew up. He lived in the wilderness of Paran and became an archer;
- (Gen 21:21) and his mother got him a wife from Egypt. (The Revised English Bible)

1<sup>st</sup>) First, the original Hebrew for Gen. 21:14 **is " and put the bread and water on her shoulder AND the boy."** Anyone fluent in Hebrew can confirm this! This reading is *still* rendered in the Revised English Bible; however, other Bible publishers possibly aware of the discrepancy decided to translate the verse slightly different; however, we can see their trick! How would a mother carry a seventeen-year-old teenager on her shoulder? Certainly he was probably strong enough to carry his mother. Ishmael must have been a baby!

2<sup>nd</sup>) Second, in Gen 21:15 we are told that Hagar put (laid) the child under one of the bushes. Ishmael must have been a baby and not a teenager!

3<sup>rd</sup>) Third, in Gen 21:16 we are told that Hagar sat away so she did not have to see the child die before her eyes. Is this the profile of a husky seventeen-year-old teenager who probably was capable of being worried about his mother dying before his eyes? Or is it obviously a profile of a small helpless baby? Ishmael must have been a baby and not a teenager!

4<sup>th</sup>) According to Gen 21:17-18, the angels told Hagar lift the child and hold him in your arms. Is a seventeen-year-old man the object of being lifted up and held in one's arms by a woman while **CRYING**? Or is it the reference of a small child. Ishmael must have been a baby and not a teenager!

5<sup>th</sup>) According to Gen 21:19 we are told that Hagar filled the bottle with water and gave the child a drink. One would expect a seventeen year old to bring water to his mother instead. Ishmael must have been a baby and not a teenager!

6<sup>th</sup>) According to Gen 21:14 Abraham puts the food and water on Hagar's shoulder. Why doesn't the strong husky seventeen-year old Ishmael offer to carry the food and water? Ishmael must have been a baby and not a teenager!

7<sup>th</sup>) According to Gen 21:20-21?? Ishmael grew up, became an archer and got married. Ishmael must have been a baby and not a teenager!

The above analysis leads to the inevitable conclusion that while the Bible contains some truths as explained earlier, there is also evidence of human additions, deletions and interpolations which only a subsequent authentic revelation could clear. The Islamic version of the story is fully consistent and coherent from A to Z; Ishmael was a baby and Isaac was not born yet when this incident took place. This proves that the real reason behind their

settlement in Arabia (Paran) was not the *dictation, jealousy, ego or sense of racial superiority on the part of Sarah. It was rather God's plan, pure and simple!*

- (Gen 21:10) Get rid of that slave woman and her son, for that slave woman's son will never share in the inheritance with my son Isaac.

How hypocritical Sarah is, for initially she saw potential in Hagar,

- (Gen 16:2) The Lord has kept me from having children. Go, sleep with my maidservant; perhaps I can build a family through her.
- (Gen 16:4) He slept with Hagar, and she conceived. When Sarah knew she was pregnant, she began to despise her mistress.

**NOTE:** *Even the Bible admits how Jews tampered with scripture.*

**Evidence:**

- (Jeremiah 8:8 RSV) How can you say, we are wise, we have the law of the LORD, ***when scribes with their lying pens have falsified it?***

## **THE SACRIFICE SON, ISAAC OR ISHMAEL?**

### **ACCORDING TO ISLAM**

According to Islam, Abraham was one of the greatest and dearest prophets of Allah who sacrificed all his life for the service of Allah. Abraham was against idol worshipers including his own father. Allah testifies his nobility in such away:

#### **Evidence:**

- **(Surah An-Nahl, 120)** Abraham was indeed a model, devoutly obedient to Allah, (and) true in Faith, and he joined not gods with Allah.
- **(Surah An-Nahl, 122)** And We gave him Good (Abraham) in this world, and he will be, in the Hereafter, in the ranks of the Righteous.
- **(Surah Maryam, 41)** (Also mention in the Book (the story of) Abraham: He was a man of Truth, a prophet.
- **(Surah Maryam, 42)** Behold, he said to his father: "O my father! why worship that which heareth not and seeth not, and can profit thee nothing?
- Who can be better in religion than one who submits his whole self to Allah, does good, and follows the way of Abraham the true in Faith? For Allah did take Abraham for a friend. **(Surah An-Nisa', 125)**

#### **Allah Tests Ibrahim:**

Allah tested Ibrahim's faith but Ibrahim pleased Allah by being patient and obedient fulfilling the commandments of Allah.

One of the greatest tests was asking Ibrahim to slaughter the only son he had. Ibrahim never had a child at a young age, so Ibrahim prayed to Allah to give HIM a child and Allah answered his prayer by giving him a son named Ismael (which means God heard your prayer).

Because Allah always tests our faith with what we love most, Allah tested Ibrahim by commanding him to sacrifice (slaughter) his only beloved son, Ismael. But because Ibrahim submitted himself to fulfill Allah's command, Allah was pleased with Ibrahim and replaced Ismael with a better sacrifice and rewarded him with the good news of another son, Isaac.

#### **Evidence:**

- "O my Lord! Grant me a righteous (son)!" **(Surah As-Saffat, 100)**
- So WE gave him the good news of a boy (Ismael) ready to suffer and forbear. **(Surah As-Saffat, 101)**

- Then, when (the son) reached (the age of) (serious) work with him, he said: "O my son! I see in vision that I offer thee in sacrifice: Now see what is thy view!" (The son) said: "O my father! Do as thou art commanded: thou wilt find me, if Allah so wills one practicing Patience and Constancy!" (**Surah As-Saffat, 102**)
- So when they had both submitted their wills (to Allah., and he had laid him prostrate on his forehead (for sacrifice), (**Surah As-Saffat, 103**)
- We called out to him "O Abraham! (**Surah As-Saffat, 104**)
- "You have already fulfilled the vision!" - thus indeed do We reward those who do right. (**Surah As-Saffat, 105**)
- And WE ransomed him with a momentous sacrifice: (**Surah As-Saffat, 107**)
- And We left (this blessing) for him among generations (to come) in later times: (**Surah As-Saffat, 108**)
- "Peace and salutation to Abraham!" (**Surah As-Saffat, 109**)
- Thus indeed do WE reward those who do right. (**Surah As-Saffat, 110**)
- For he was one of our believing Servants. (**Surah As-Saffat, 111**)
- And We gave him the good news of Isaac - a prophet, one of the Righteous. (**Surah As-Saffat, 112**)

### THE COVENANT OF ALLAH WITH IBRAHIM:

Because of Abraham's strong trust in Allah and his obedience and dedication to HIS commandments, Allah then promised Abraham to make him the faithful leader (Imam) of mankind. But when Abraham replied by asking God to create future faithful leaders from his descendants too, Allah agreed but also made it clear that **evildoers** of his descendants will not be legible to become spiritual leaders.

#### Evidence:

- [**Surah Al-Baqara, 124**] And remember that Abraham was tried by his Lord with certain commands, which he fulfilled: HE said: "I will make you an Imam (Leader) to the Nations." He pleaded: "And also (Imams) from my offspring!" HE answered: "But My Promise is not within the reach of evil-doers."

Therefore, the Islamic covenant of Allah (God) with Abraham clearly shows that Allah promised Abraham to make him faithful leader of nations after him and to make future leaders from his descendants as well but only faithful and righteous person of his descendants will be legible to become religious leaders of people.

Allah doesn't differentiate people because of their races, tribes, colors, or languages. Allah sees the faith and righteousness of the person.

**Evidence:**

- [Surah Al-Hujrat: 13] "O Mankind, WE created you from a single (*pair*) of a male and a female. And made you into nations and tribes that you may know each other (not that you may despise each other). Verily the most honored of you in the sight of God is (he who is) the most righteous of you. And God has full knowledge and is well acquainted (with all things).

Therefore according to Islam, because both Ismael and Isaac were righteous sons of Ibrahim, Allah made them spiritual leaders for many centuries. Allah made both Isaac and Ismael His prophets and through Isaac prophets like Yaqub, Yusuf, David, Solomon, John the Baptist and Jesus came out as leaders calling people to worship the God of Abraham. And through Ismael, God brought forth the final prophet and messenger of God, Mohammed (PBUH).

All other prophets who came before prophet Mohammed including Prophet Jesus were sent to specific nation for a specific time, However because Prophet Mohammed is the last Prophet and messenger until the end of the world, He was sent for the whole of mankind.

Everyone who is alive and is reading this book is the generation of Prophet Mohammed and will have to follow Prophet Mohammed who has called every family of the earth to worship the God of Abraham.

**The Sacrifice son: Ismail**

Contrary to the bible's story which says Hagar and Ismael were sent to the Arabian Desert because of Sara's jealousy, In the Holy Quran however Allah tells us that Ibrahim was divinely instructed to take Hagar and Ismael to the desert or the recent day city of Meccah in Saudi Arabia.

The companion or disciple of Prophet Mohammed Abdellah Ibn Abas narrates the story in such a way:

"One day Abraham woke up and asked his wife Hajar to get her son and prepare for a long journey. In a few days Abraham started out with his wife Hajar and their son Ishmael. The child was still nursing and not yet weaned.

Abraham walked through cultivated land, desert, and mountains until he reached the desert of the Arabian Peninsula and came to an uncultivated valley having no fruit, no trees, no food, no water. The valley had no sign of life. After Abraham had helped his wife and child to dismount, he left them with a small amount of food and water which was hardly enough for 2 days. He

turned around and walked away. His wife hurried after him asking: "Where are you going Abraham, leaving us in this barren valley?"

Abraham did not answer her, but continued walking. She repeated what she had said, but he remained silent. Finally she understood that he was not acting on his own initiative. she realized that Allah had commanded him to do this. She asked him : "Did Allah command you to do so?" He replied: "Yes." Then his great wife said: "We are not going to be lost, since Allah Who has commanded you is with us."

Then as he departed away, Abraham invoked Almighty Allah saying:

- *"O Our Lord! I have made some of my offspring to dwell in a valley with no cultivation, by Your Sacred House (the Ka'ba at Mecca); in order, O our Lord, that they may offer prayers perfectly (Iqamat as salat) so fill some hearts among men with love towards them, and O Allah provide them with fruits so that they may give thanks. O our Lord! Certainly, You know what we conceal and what we reveal. Nothing on the earth or in the heavens is hidden from Allah."* (Al Quran, Ch 14:37-38)

Ishmael's mother went on suckling Ishmael and drinking from the water (she had) When the water in the water skin had been used up, she became thirsty and her child also became thirsty, She started looking at him (Ishmael) tossing in agony.

She left him, for she could not endure looking at him, and found that the mountain of As-Safa was the nearest mountain to her on that land. she too on it and started looking at the valley keenly so that she might see somebody, but she could not see anybody. Then she descended for As Safa and when she reached the valley, she tucked up her robe and ran in the valley like a person in distress and trouble till she crossed the valley and reached the mountain of Al Marwa. There she stood and started looking expecting to see somebody, but she could not see anybody. she repeated that running between Safa And Marwa seven times."

When she reached Al Marwa (for the last time) she heard a voice again and said: "O whoever you maybe! You have made me hear your voice; have you got something to help me?" And behold! She saw an angel at the place of Zam zam, digging the earth with his heel (or his wing) till water flowed from that place. Then she drank water and suckled her child. The angel said to her: "Don't be afraid of being neglected, for this is the House of Allah which will be built by this boy and his father, and Allah never neglects His people."

She lived in that way till some people from the tribe of Jurhum ( a tribe from Yemen) passed by her and eventually settled there. Allah answered Abraham's prayer and he sent them with good people and blessed their lands with fruits, water and cultivation and when Ismael grew up he married one of the girls from those tribes and." According to the Muslim version Abraham did not just abandon his son and never talk to him again. Abraham would still keep in contact with Ishmael and visit him including the time he visited him to build the house of Allah, Al Kaaba.

Today, the running between the two hills of Al Safa and Al Merwa as the mother of Ismael did is one of the rituals the Muslim Pilgrims perform when they go to visit Al-Kaaba, the house of Allah both Abraham and Ismael built, during the Hajj ceremony (The annual world's biggest gathering of followers of the religion of Abraham, Muslims).

### 1.3. HISTORICAL ACCOUNT OF THE BIBLE:

The Christian Bibles are composed of two parts, the Old Testament and The New Testament (NT). The Old Testament (OT) is the part of their holy-book which contains stories of prophets and people before the coming of Jesus Christ. And the New Testament talks about the life time of Jesus. Because the Jews rejected Jesus, they consider the New Testament as a lie.

But according to Islam: when the Jews corrupted the teachings of Prophet Moses, God sent Prophet Jesus to correct their errors and to teach them the Gospel (Injil). But those so called religious leaders who were claiming to have preserved the original teaching of Moses hated Jesus so much when he exposed their false claim. So they plotted to kill him. But Allah saved him by raising him up to himself alive. Allah will send him back to earth closer to the end time of this world. After Jesus was gone, people again corrupted the Gospel and God had to send another but the last book, Al-Quran, to re-correct the corrupted teachings of Jesus and as the guidance for the whole of mankind until the end of the world. When Jesus comes back, he will establish peace around the world using the last book of God, Al- Quran. He will make it clear that he never claimed to be God. Jesus will then live the rest of life and eventually will die. The Muslims will then burry him. Time then passes and when no single person who recognizes Allah is left, Allah will destroy everyone and the world. And finally when every creation of Allah, including the angels, is either dead or are destroyed. Allah alone remains and He will finally resurrect us back to life to complete his justice between us. That terrifying day is called the Day of Judgment. And Justice will perfectly be served!

Although there are more than 33,000 Christian denominations around the world, most of them use either the Protestant's or the Catholic's bibles. When the Catholic bible contains 73 books (46 OT books & 27 NT books), the protestant and the Ethiopian orthodox sect bibles contain 66 (39 OT books & 27 NT books) and 81 (46 OT books & 35 NT books) respectively. Each one of them accuses the other sect of blasphemy for adding or deleting God's words.

For countless ages, the only book of history available to Christians and Jews was the Old Testament. When someone wanted to know what happened in the past, they would go back and study the Old Testament to find the answer. New theories about history literally lived and died by their conformance to what the Old Testament taught. Then the discrepancies began to be noticed.

Once mankind began to study the Old Testament in detail, comparing the various passages which referred to the same topic in order to obtain as much detail as possible, they began to notice conflicting accounts of many matters as well as other problems. For instance, in the 11<sup>th</sup> century, it was noticed that the list of Edomite kings in Genesis 36 names kings who lived long after Moses was dead.



After this, it was noticed that in the beginning verses of the OT manuscripts, Deuteronomy says: ***“These are the words that Moses spoke to the children of Israel across the Jordan....”*** They noticed that the phrase “across the Jordan” refers to people who are on the opposite side of the Jordan River to the author. But the alleged author, Moses himself, was never supposed to have been in Israel in his life.

It was also noticed that Moses speaks in detail in Deuteronomy 34:5-10 about how he died and where he was buried. Moses also calls himself the most humble man on earth in Numbers 12:3 (would the most humble man on earth call himself the most humble man on earth?). In Deuteronomy 34:10 we read ***“And there arose not a prophet since in Israel like unto Moses.”*** This also implies that the author was looking back at Moses through history a long time after Moses’s death. Now the flood gates were opened and countless other discrepancies began to show up.

In the beginning, it was claimed that Moses wrote the Pentateuch (Five “books of Moses”) and anyone contesting this fact would be severely punished or worse. However, when these matters started to become well known, it became necessary to find explanations.

Then a little later a startling new discovery was made. It was noticed that the stories in the five books of Moses were made up of doublets. A doublet is a case of one story being told twice. Even in the English translation of the Bible, the doublets are noticeable. These doublets have been masterfully intertwined so that they become one narrative.

For example, there are doublets of the creation of the world, the covenant between God and Abraham, the naming of Isaac, Abraham’s claim that his wife Sarah was his sister, the story of Jacob’s journey to Mesopotamia, Jacob’s revelation at Beth-El,...and on and on. In many cases these doublets actually contradict one another.

Then it was discovered that when the doublets were separated into two separate accounts, each account was almost always consistent about the name of the deity that it used. One would always refer to God as Yahweh/Jehovah. This document was called “J.” The other always referred to Him as Elohim (God). It was called “E.” There were various other literary characteristics which were then found to be common to one group or the other. It became obvious that someone had taken two separate accounts of the ministry of Moses (pbuh), cut them up, and then woven them together quite masterfully so that their actions would not be discovered until countless centuries later.

Once this startling discovery was made, the Old Testament was once again placed under the scrutiny of scholars and it was discovered that the Pentateuch was not made up of two major source documents but FOUR. It was discovered that some stories were not only doublets, but triplets. Additional literary characteristics were identified for these documents. The third source was called P (for Priestly), and the fourth D (for Deuteronomy).

In the end it was concluded that the first four “books of Moses” were the result of the merging of three separate accounts which were called J, E, and P, and the book of Deuteronomy was found to be a separate account which was called D. The person (or persons) who collected and intertwined these sources was called “The Redactor.”

All of this has become so firmly established in accepted scientific fact that even Grolier’s encyclopedia now readily admits it. Under the heading “Divisions of the Old Testament” it states: *“The Pentateuch is based on four principal sources. The oldest, J, was perhaps written in Judah, the southern kingdom, about 950 BC. Between 900 and 750, another version from Israel, the northern kingdom, was woven in; this is called EPHRAIM (E). In the 7th century BC, Deuteronomy, or most of it (D), was compiled. About 550 BC, during the exile, the final edition of the Torah added a priestly source (P), some parts of which are very old.”*

In his book “Who wrote the Bible,” Prof. Friedman presents strong evidence that each “source document” was written by a person or persons who, while on the face of it seem to narrate the same stories, in actuality had distinctly different goals they wished to achieve.

According to Mr. Friedman, the P (Priestly) source seems to be particularly interested in priests, their lineage, their being the only ones who are allowed to sacrifice to God, the importance of sacrifice to God, and the surprising absence of all stories wherein anyone not of their lineage made a sacrifice that was accepted by God (for instance the sacrifice of the sons of Adam is missing from this narrative).

The author goes on to show how in J and E we can find similar emphasis on one tribe of the Jews over the other. For instance, on pages 64-65 he shows how both the J and E documents attempt to give the birthright of Jacob to their own forefathers. He also shows how in the E version, Joseph is saved by his brother Ruben (the firstborn of Israel), while in the J version it is Judah who saves him. The author presents countless other proofs of these claims.

Well, what about the rest of the Old Testament? Are the remaining books of the Old Testament known to have been preserved from change since the time of their first writing and truly to be the words of the claimed authors? No!

Fourteen hundred years ago, back when it was a blasphemy of the highest order punishable by death and worse to dare allege that the claimed authors of the Bible were not the true authors, the Qur’an was sent down upon Muhammad (pbuh) by God almighty with the claim that “the people of the Book” (Jews and Christians) had changed the book of God. Muhammad (pbuh) further claimed that he was sent with the true religion of God which was sent down upon Moses and Jesus (peace be upon them all). The Christians responded that Muslims were ignorant savages who had concocted their own religion by copying Christianity (just as the Jews before them had claimed that the Christians had plagiarized Judaism), and only an insane person would ever make such allegations. We invite the reader to judge for themselves who was telling the truth.

**Table: Authors of the Old Testament**

The Christian and Jew scholars of the world have done a long detailed investigation to find the authors of the books of the bible and here is what they found out.

OLD TESTAMENT		
S.NO	BOOK NAME	AUTHOR
1	Genesis	<b>Generally</b> credited to Moses
2	Exodus	<b>Generally</b> credited to Moses
3	Leviticus	<b>Generally</b> credited to Moses
4	Numbers	<b>Generally</b> credited to Moses
5	Deuteronomy	<b>Generally</b> credited to Moses
6	Joshua	<b>Major part</b> credited to Joshua
7	Judges	<b>Possibly</b> Samuel
8	Ruth	Not definitely known, <b>Perhaps</b> Samuel.
9	First Samuel	<b>Unknown</b>
10	Second Samuel	<b>Unknown</b>
11	First Kings	<b>Unknown</b>
12	Second Kings	<b>Unknown</b>
13	First Chronicles	<b>Unknown</b>
14	Second Chronicles	<b>Unknown</b>
15	Ezra	<b>Probably</b> written or edited by Ezra
16	Esther	<b>Unknown</b>
17	Job	<b>Unknown</b>
18	Psalms	Principally David, though there are <b>other writers</b> .
19	Ecclesiastes	Doubtful, but <b>commonly</b> assigned to Solomon.
20	Isaiah	Mainly credited to Isaiah. Parts <b>may</b> have been written <b>by others</b> .
21	Jonah	<b>Unknown</b>
22	Habakkuk	<b>Nothing Known</b> of the place or time of his birth.
23	1 <sup>st</sup> Samuel	<b>Unknown</b>
24	2 <sup>nd</sup> Samuel	<b>Unknown</b>
25	1 <sup>st</sup> King	<b>Unknown</b>
26	2 <sup>nd</sup> King	<b>Unknown</b>
27	Etc.	<b>Etc.</b>

Is all of this restricted to the Old Testament? No! Christian scholars today call the Gospels of Matthew, Mark, and Luke, the “Synoptic” (One eyed) Gospels. This is because they all seem to have had access to a common source document they were working from when they wrote their Gospels. This source document is called ‘Q’. Now they are beginning to recognize that the alleged authors are not the true authors. Similarly, countless verses of the Gospel of John, as well as other historical discrepancies, also go to show that John did not write the

Gospel of John. John's Gospel is from a different source, and was written later still, in Greek, in about 100 AD. The author of this Gospel should not be confused with John, the disciple, who was another man. For two centuries it was hotly debated whether or not this Gospel should be accepted as a reliable account of the life of Jesus, and whether or not it should be included in the Scriptures.

Certainly, the picture many people have been given of Jesus of who he was, and what he did -is a distorted one. Although there is some truth in them, it has been established that the four accepted Gospels have not only been altered and censored through the ages, but also are not eyewitness accounts.

Since none of the Gospels are written by people who personally saw and heard the events and words which they describe, it is hardly surprising that their respective accounts of particular events often differ -and at times even contradict each other -and that even highly significant events in the life of Jesus are not described in all of the Gospels. Thus, as Dr Maurice Bucaille points out in his book, *The Bible, the Qur'an and Science*:

Each of the four Gospels contains a large number of descriptions relating events that may be unique to one single Gospel or common to several if not all of them. When they are unique to one Gospel, they sometimes raise serious problems. Thus in the case of an event of considerable importance, it is surprising to find the event mentioned by only one evangelist; Jesus's Ascension into heaven on the day of Resurrection, for example. Elsewhere, numerous events are differently described sometimes very differently indeed -by two or more evangelists. Christians are very often astonished at the existence of such contradictions between the Gospels if they ever discover them, this is because it has been repeatedly said in stories of the greatest assurance that their' authors were the eyewitnesses of the events they describe!

Fortunately, there are other sources of knowledge concerning Jesus, some of which have survived the repeated attempts of the established Church to either suppress or destroy them:

In the early days of Christianity, many writings on Jesus were in circulation. They were not subsequently retained as being worthy of authenticity and the Church ordered them to be hidden, hence their name '*Apocrypha*'. Some of the texts of these works have been well preserved because they 'benefited from the fact that they were generally valued', to quote the Ecumenical Translation. The same was true for the *Letter of Barnabas*, but unfortunately others were 'more brutally thrust aside' and only fragments of them remain. They were considered to be the messengers of error and were removed from the sight of the faithful. Works such as the Gospels of the Nazarenes, the Gospels of the Hebrews and the Gospels of the Egyptians, known through quotations taken from the Fathers of the Church, were nevertheless fairly closely related to the canonic Gospels. The same holds good for Thomas's Gospel and Barnabas's Gospel.

As regards other sources, the discovery of the famous *Dead Sea Scrolls* has thrown new light on the nature of the society into which Jesus was born, although some of their contents have been

intentionally suppressed, and only selections made available to the general public; the *Gospel of Barnabas* covers Jesus's life more extensively and accurately than the other Gospels; and the *Qur'an* and the *Hadith* further clarify the picture of who Jesus really was.

If these additional sources are consulted, then a picture which is different in many important respects to those fostered by the various Christian churches emerges:

We find that Jesus, peace be on him, was not the son' of God, in the literal sense of the word -but, like Abraham and Moses before him and Muhammad after him, a Messenger of God, blessings and peace be on all of them, who, like all human beings ate food, and had to sleep, and went to the market place.

We find that Jesus inevitably found himself doing battle with those people whose interests were in conflict with what he taught. They either did not accept the guidance he received, or knowing it to be true, nevertheless chose to ignore it in favor of pursuing power, riches and reputation in the eyes of men.

Further, we find that Jesus's life on earth is an integral part of Jewish history, and that to understand his story it is necessary to be aware of theirs. Throughout his life Jesus was an orthodox practicing Jew, and the fact that he came to reaffirm and revive the original teachings of Moses, which had been altered through the years, should never be overlooked.

Finally, we find that Jesus was neither killed nor crucified. God protected him by raising him up to himself alive. Whosoever was crucified, was definitely not Jesus.

***“Of the Jews are those change words from their places and say: “We hear (your words O Muhammad) and disobey; hear you as one who hears not” and “give us concession” with a twist of their tongues and as a mockery of religion(Islam). But if only they had said: “We hear and we obey” and “Do make us understand” it would have been better for them and more upright. But Allah has cursed them for their disbelief, so they believe not, except a few.”***

The Qur'an, Al-Nissa(4):46.

***“Then woe to those who write the book (of God) with their own hands and then say: 'This is from Allah', to traffic with it for a miserable price. Woe to them for what their hands do write and for the gain they make thereby”*** The holy Qur'an Al-Bakarah(2):79

If we were to ask a Christian “Are the ‘New and Old Testaments’ in your hands today the same “New and Old Testaments” available to the apostles of Jesus (pbuh) till the present day?” They would answer “Of course! There has ever been only one Bible!” But that is not the truth.

If we were to go to a Western library and look up the history of the Bible as recorded by their own eminent Christian scholars throughout the ages, we would find that they tell us that the books of the “New Testament” in our possession today were not officially approved into the

New Testament “canon” of “inspired” books until many centuries after the departure of Jesus. Tens of generations of Christians literally lived and died after the departure of Jesus (pbuh) never having known nor seen such a “New Testament” or “Bible” as the one in our possession today.

After the departure of Jesus (pbuh), the apostles and many other people began to write “Gospels.” Each one of these authors would travel to other lands and be followed by a number of people who would adopt this man’s Gospel as his “Bible.” Now, even the unscrupulous began to write “gospels” and to claim they were from a given apostle or that they themselves were receiving divine inspiration. Many new and innovative teachings began now to be introduced into the religion of Jesus (pbuh). Enmity, hatred and war began to break out between these groups. Each person claimed that they alone held the “true” Gospel of Jesus (pbuh) and no one else. Their beliefs now ran the gamut, from those who believed Jesus (pbuh) to be a mortal messenger of God and nothing more, to those who claimed partial divinity for Jesus (pbuh), to those who claimed Jesus (pbuh) to be a true god, but independent of God himself, to those who called for a “Trinity,” to those who claimed that Mary (pbuh) too was a god. This is when the war of the gospels started.

Christian sects butchered one another right and left. There were more great debates and councils than you could shake a stick at. However, none of these groups had sufficient might to totally dominate and silence the others for good. They needed an undefeatable ally, so they began to look to the Roman empire for support. The Roman empire was a pagan empire, however, it was the dominant “superpower” of the time. Anyone who could enlist it’s aid would have an unconquerable ally at it’s side and would itself be undefeatable. On the Roman side, Emperor Constantine had just murdered his son and wife and the result of this was a very real threat of a popular uprising from his subjects against him. It was therefore expedient for him to ally himself with the Christians in order to enlist the additional loyal support he so desperately needed to ensure his survival.

Most of these fringe sects now began to fade into insignificance and the matter was now left between those who believed in the Unity of God and those who believed in a “Trinity.”

The Roman empire’s support fluctuated between these two groups for a long time until the Trinitarian’s finally gained the upper hand and after the Council of Nicea (325 CE) and all but wiped the Unitarians off the face of the earth. They then selected and collected the “truly inspired” gospels into one volume which later became the “New Testament.” They burned all other gospels.

The Council of Nicea (Which is now turkey) was called by the pagan emperor of Rome named Constantine in order to settle the dispute between the Trinitarians and Unitarians and stabilize the region he was governing. And Constantine leaned for the Trinitarians as they were flexible for his rulings. After this council, four Gospels, Mathew, Mark, Luke & John, were selected out of a minimum of three hundred available and the rest, including the Gospel of Barnabas (

before 325 it was accepted as canonical in the churches of Alexandria), were ordered utterly destroyed. All Gospels written in Hebrew were also ordered destroyed. And the Epistle of Jude was attested genuine and believable

Many sweeping campaigns of "Inquisition" were launched. Everyone found possessing any of these "false" Gospels was put to death and his Gospel burned. Examples of those who were put to death are the philosopher Giordano Bruno, Galileo, Joan of Arc, and the religious order of knights called the Templars among countless hundreds of thousands of others.

Examples of those who were put to death are the philosopher Giordano Bruno, Galileo, Joan of Arc, and the religious order of knights called the Templars among countless hundreds of thousands of others.

When things began to quiet down a little, the victor's historians and philosophers wrote their history books explaining how they managed to overcome the wicked, to defeat the blasphemers, and to burn the devils at the stake. These are the books which have had the greatest influence on the Western history books we have in our hands today.

In the year 364 AD, another council was held in Liodicia for the same purpose. And they decided and declared to the public that the following six books must also be added to the list of genuine and believable books: The book of Esther, The Epistle of James, The 2<sup>nd</sup> Epistle of Peter, The 2<sup>nd</sup> and 3<sup>rd</sup> Epistle of John, The Epistle of Paul to the Hebrews.

In 397 another great conference was held called the Council of Carthage. Augustine, the great Christian scholar, was among the one hundred and twenty six learned participants. And they also declared more list of their divine books: The Book of the Songs of Solomon, The Book of Tobit, The Book of Baruch, Ecclesiasticus, and The First and Second Books of Maccabees.

After these councils a number of subsequent Councils took place and nearly all the books which had previously been doubtful among Christians were now included in the list of acknowledged books.

The status of these books remained unchanged until the Protestant Reformation in 1500's. The Protestants repudiated the decisions of the councils and declared that there are only 66 truly "inspired" books of God, and not 73 as claimed by the Catholics. The following books were to be rejected: The Book of Baruch, The Book of Tobit, The Letter of Jude, The Songs of Solomon, Ecclesiasticus, The First and Second Books of Maccabees. They excluded these books from the list of acknowledged books.

The Protestants also rejected the decision of their forbears regarding some chapters of the book of Esther. This book consists of 16 chapters. They decided that the first nine chapters and three verses from chapter 10 were to be rejected.

Groliers encyclopedia says under the heading “New Testament, canon”

Groliers encyclopedia says under the heading “New Testament, canon”: *“The process by which the canon of the New Testament was formed began in the 2d century, probably with a collection of ten letters of Paul. Toward the end of that century, Irenaeus argued for the unique authority of the portion of the Canon called the Gospels. Acceptance of the other books came gradually. The church in Egypt used more than the present 27 books, and the Syriac-speaking churches fewer. The question of an official canon became urgent during the 4th century. It was mainly through the influence of Athanasius, bishop of Alexandria, and because Jerome included the 27 books in his Latin version of the Bible called the Vulgate (380 AD), that the present canon came to be accepted.”*

### **AUTHORS OF THE NEW TESTAMENT:**

Thirteen (13) out of the 27 books of the New Testament are personal letters of the self appointed disciple of Jesus. Although Jesus made it clear that The gospel was only meant to the children of Israel, Paul preached otherwise and wrote those letters to his representatives of the Romans, Corinthians, Galatians, and Philippians etc. sometimes advising them about religious matters and sometimes about his very personal messages.

Many accuse Paul of inventing the religion of Christianity which is now believed by many around the world. It is a known fact that Paul never met Jesus in his life time. Paul was one of the strongest enemies of the disciples and followers of Jesus Christ. When the persecution of Paul and his allies was too hard to bear, some followers of Jesus left Jerusalem and went to Damascus to save their lives. However out of his enmity, Paul in collaboration with the Roma authorities, he started travelling to Damascus to bring and punish the sincere followers of Jesus. For the next couple of years, No one heard about Paul and suddenly, one day, He returned back to Jerusalem and started to claim that while he was on his way to Damascus he saw the vision of Jesus and that he was chosen by Jesus to preach. Since then, every dispute between Christianity and the real teachings of Jesus started to contradict with one another.

#### **Evidence:**

- (Act 22:4) And I persecuted this way unto the death, binding and delivering into prisons both men and women.
- (Act 22:5) As also the high priest doth bear me witness, and all the estate of the elders: from whom also I received letters unto the brethren, and went to Damascus, to bring them which were there bound unto Jerusalem, for to be punished.

Paul hated the followers of Jesus so much that he made it his goal to capture and bring Jesus’s followers to public trial and execution. Paul was present when the first martyr follower of Jesus (Stephen) was killed by an angry mob.



- (Act 7:58) And cast him (*Stephen*) out of the city, and stoned him: and the witnesses laid down their clothes at a young man's feet, whose name was Saul.
- (Act 7:59) And they stoned Stephen, calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit.
- (Act 8:1) And Saul was there, giving approval to his death...
- (Act 8:3) As for Saul, he made havoc of the church, entering into every house, and haling men and women committed *them* to prison.

The contradiction of Paul's teaching with what Jesus taught his disciples began when Paul started to preach Gospel to Non-Jew or gentiles although Jesus forbade teaching the Gospel to the gentiles. The real reason why Paul preached to the gentiles is because they were ignorant of the Torah. They did not possess intimate knowledge of Judaism, its scripture or its doctrine. Therefore Paul was not presenting his new religion to his own brethren because they would be able to debunk him. Due to this, logically speaking, he preached to those who could find his new faith appealing. The gentiles would not argue about Jesus' deity or about the new doctrine of salvation, but the Jews would and vehemently so. Thus the path of least resistance is among the gentiles who eventually see him as an authoritative figure, as opposed to the Jews who would see him as a heretic and shame him. As he predicted he succeeded in establishing his doctrine and sadly drove billions of people astray.

### **Some of Paul's contradictions with Jesus are:**

1. **Jesus** claims to have come to keep the law of Moses and not break it (Mathew 5:17-19) ; **Paul** says we don't have to (Romans 7:1-6) , (Gal 2:16)
2. **Jesus** (Mathew 10: 5-6) says he was a messenger for the Jews only; **Paul** in (Romans 11:13) says "Why not!" And he called himself the apostle of the Gentiles.
3. **Jesus** commands not to eat meat sacrificed to Idols; **Paul** says it is ok
4. **Jesus** in (Luke 18: 10-14) says Salvation is through repentance from Sin and obedience beside faith; **Paul** says by only Faith (Romans 10:9)

Even when the four (4) most widely used books of the New Testament i.e. The Gospel of Mathew, Gospel of Mark, Gospel of Luke and Gospel of John are examined, we find that they also were not written by the eye witness and the disciples of Jesus.

### **The Gospel according to Mathew:**

Matthew who never met Jesus was a tax collector. Internal evidence proves that Matthew was not the author of the first Gospel which bears his name.

### **Evidence:**

- (Mat 9:9) And as Jesus passed forth from thence, he (Jesus) saw a man, named Matthew, sitting at the receipt of custom: and he (Jesus) said unto him (Matthew), **Follow me** (Jesus). And he (Matthew) arose, and followed him (Jesus).

Without any stretch of the imagination, one can see that the "He's" and the "Him's" of the above narration do not refer to Jesus or Matthew as its author, but some third person writing what he saw and heard - a hearsay account. If we cannot even attribute this "book of dreams" (as the first Gospel is also described) to the disciple Matthew, how can we accept it as the Word of God?

### **The Gospel according to Mark:**

It must be remembered that John Mark, whose Gospel is the earliest of the four accepted Gospels, was the son of the sister of Barnabas. He never met Jesus. Thus, what he related of Jesus's life and teaching in his Gospel must have been related to him by others. It is known from the books of the *New Testament* that he accompanied Paul and Barnabas on many of their missionary journeys up to the point when there was a sharp conflict between them, resulting in Barnabas and Mark going to Cyprus together. It is unlikely that Mark relied on Paul as a source of information since Paul had never met Jesus either.

It has been argued that Mark's Gospel might be the 'Q' Gospel and that Matthew and Luke used his Gospel when writing theirs. However, they record details which Mark does not, which imply that Mark's Gospel could not have been their only source.

### **The Gospel according to Luke:**

Luke, who also wrote the Acts of the Apostles, never met Jesus. He was Paul's personal physician.

Luke tells us that many books were written by people before him and it seemed good to him to put those written texts in order so we can understand easily. Luke never claimed to have written the gospel by inspiration from God.

### **Evidence:**

- (Luk 1:1) Forasmuch as many have taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things which are most surely believed among us,
- (Luk 1:2) Even as they delivered them unto us, which from the beginning were eyewitnesses, and ministers of the word;
- (Luk 1:3) **It seemed good to me also**, having had perfect understanding of all things from the very first, **to write unto thee in order**, most excellent Theophilus,
- (Luk 1:4) **That thou mightest know** the certainty of those things, wherein thou hast been instructed.

## **The Gospel according to John**

### **Evidence:**

- (Joh 19:35) And he that saw it bare record, and his record is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might believe.

**NOTE:** Who is “HE” and “HIS”? Definitely not John!

- (Joh 21:24) This is the disciple which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things: and we know that his testimony is true.
- (Joh 21:25) And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written. Amen.

**NOTE:** Who is “WE” and “I”? It is clear that it was not the disciple John who wrote this!

The bible itself admits how Jews manipulated the original scriptures God sent.

### **Evidence:**

- (Jeremiah 8:8 RSV) How can you say, we are wise, we have the law of the LORD, *when scribes with their lying pens have falsified it?*

## 1.4. ORIGINAL LANGUAGE OF THE NEW TESTAMENT: GREEK OR HEBREW?

The Books collected into the New Testament do not constitute the utterances of Jesus nor of his disciples. Jesus was of Jewish ancestry and so were his disciples. If any of Jesus' utterances were to be found preserved in their original form, they could only be in the Hebrew or Aramaic.

Same is the case with the utterances of his disciples. But no copy of the New Testament in ancient Hebrew or Aramaic exists in the world. The old copies are all in Greek.

Christian writers try to cover this Grave Defect by saying that in the times of Jesus the language in general use was Greek as you do. This is impossible for more reasons than one.

Nations do not easily give up their language. It is for them as valuable an inheritance as any property or other possession. In Eastern Europe, there are people who for three or four hundred years have lived under Russian rule, but their languages remain intact to this day.

France and Spain have ruled over Morocco and Algeria for a long time. Yet the language of these former subjected people is still Arabic. Two thousand years have passed since the time of Jesus. Yet the Jews have not forgotten their language.

Even today, in parts of Europe and America, Jews speak "Yiddish", a corrupt form of ancient Hebrew. If this long lapse of time spent amongst other peoples has not destroyed the Jewish language, then Roman rule in Palestine which had begun only about 50 years before the advent of Jesus was not long enough for a people to forget their language. But there are other important considerations also to be kept in view:

1. Nations which attain to any importance in history do not give up their language, and the Jews were a very important people indeed.
2. The religion of the Jews was recorded in Hebrew and for this reason particularly it was impossible for them to give up their language.
3. In the scale of civilization and refinement, the Jews did not regard themselves as inferior to the Romans, rather they felt Superior and this must have made them proud of their language and reluctant to give it up.
4. The Jews entertained hopes for the return of their political power; nations which fear the future become pessimistic and therefore tend to lose pride in their language. But the Jews in the time of Jesus were awaiting the advent of their King who was to re-establish Jewish rule. Looking forward to such a future, they could not have been so negligent in protecting their language.
5. Jewish authors of that time wrote in their own language or in some corrupt form of it. If their language had changed, we should have had books of the time written in a language other than Hebrew.
6. The oldest manuscripts of the New Testament are in Greek. But in the time of Jesus, the Roman Empire had not become divided into two halves. The center of the Empire was

still Rome. The Roman and Greek languages are very difficult. If Roman influence had at all penetrated Jewish life, it should have resulted in the assimilation of Latin (and not Greek) words into the Hebrew language. Yet the oldest manuscripts of the Gospels are all in Greek. This proves that the Gospels were written down at a time when the Roman Empire had become divided ( in 285 CE) and its eastern possession had become part of the Greek Empire, so that the Greek language had begun to exert its influence on Christianity and its literature.

7. Phrases such as the following which are preserved in the Gospels in their original form are all Hebrew phrases: (a) "Hossana" - Matthew 21:9 (b) "Eli, Eli, Lama Sabachthani" - Matthew 27:46 (c) "Rabbi" - John 3:2 (d) "Talitha cumi" - Mark 5:41

From the Acts, it appears that even after the crucifixion Jews spoke Hebrew:

"And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance. And there were dwelling at Jerusalem Jews, devout men, out of every nation under heaven. Now when this was noised abroad, the multitude came together, and were confounded, because that every man heard them speak in his own language. And they were all amazed and marveled, saying one to another, Behold are not all these which speak Galilaeans ? And how hear we, every man in our own tongue, where in we were born ? Parthians and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Judea, and Cappadocia, in Pontus, and Asia, Phrygia, and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in the parts of Libya about Cyrene, and in strangers of Rome, Jews and proselytes, Cretans and Arabians, we do hear them speak in our tongues the wonderful works of God. And they were all amazed, and were in doubt, saying one to another, What meaneth this ? Others mocking said, These men are full of new wine." (Acts 2:3-13)

It is evident that at this time the language spoken in Palestine was Hebrew. Speaking any other language was extraordinary. Among the names mentioned is Rome, which means that the Roman language was not spoken in Palestine and whoever spoke it seemed a stranger.

We are not concerned here with the merits of the narrative but we only wish to point out that this passage from the Acts proves conclusively that even after the crucifixion the language of the Jews was Hebrew. Those who knew other languages were exceptions. When some of the disciples spoke these other languages - among them Latin. Some people thought they were drunk and talking nonsense. If the country as a whole used Roman or Greek. no such reaction would be possible.

It is clear, therefore, that the language which Jesus and his disciples spoke was Hebrew, not Latin or Greek. So copies of the New Testament written down in Latin or Greek must have been written down long after the time of Jesus, at a time when Christianity had begun to penetrate into Roman territory and Roman imperialist power had become divided into the Italian and Greek Parts. Books of this kind, composed 100 or 200 years after Jesus by unknown authors and attributed by them to Jesus and his disciples, can be of little use to any believer today. It was

necessary, therefore, that we should have had another book sent to us from heaven, free from these defects and one which readers could regard with certainty as the very Word of God. The Holy Qur'an.

## 1.5. THE FALSE DOCTRINE OF ORIGINAL SIN:

The doctrine of the original sin was never taught by Jesus or by his faithful disciples; it said to have been introduced in the doctrine of Christianity mostly by a man named Augustine in the 4<sup>th</sup> century and became wide spread as the basic belief of Christianity until today.

Original Sin states that because our father Adam sinned by disobeying God by eating from the forbidden fruit of paradise, then all the descendants of Adam automatically shares the sin of Adam although no one took part in participating or advising Adam to do so.

The doctrine of Original Sin basically boils down to this:

1. I have a sinful nature by birth.
2. I have "inherited" this sinful nature from Adam.
3. This sinful nature is going to make me sin, or is a causative something back of the will.
4. I am unable to keep the requirements of God's Law.
5. God is going to condemn me to Hell for having this sinful nature.

Although God himself testifies to the truth that no one's Son shall be blamed for the sin of the father and vice versa, It is the custom of Christian scholars to try to misquote verses out of context from the bible to justify their beliefs. The Bible never says that sin is committed when babies are born. The Bible always says that sin is committed when men transgress the law

Therefore, Sin according to the bible is defined as "Transgression of the Law"

### Evidence:

- (1Jn 3:4) Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law: for ***sin is the transgression of the law.***
- (1Jn 5:17) All unrighteousness is sin.
- (Jas 4:17) Him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin.

God himself denies the claim of the Inheritance of Sin:

### Evidence:

- (Eze 18:20) The soul that sinneth, it shall die. The son shall not bear the iniquity of the father, neither shall the father bear the iniquity of the son: the righteousness of the righteous shall be upon him, and the wickedness of the wicked shall be upon him.
- (Eze 18:21) But if the wicked will turn from all his sins that he hath committed, and keep all my statutes, and do that which is lawful and right, he shall surely live, he shall not die.

- (Eze 18:22) All his transgressions that he hath committed, they shall not be mentioned unto him: in his righteousness that he hath done he shall live.

**NOTE:** the above two verses inform us that God accepts the repentance of the sinner or the wicked if he turns away from his previous sins and starts practicing what is lawful and right.

The Bible tells us that the sinner is a sinner because he commits sin. Adam and Eve committed sin in the garden and they became sinners. A man can only be a sinner by committing sin. No one can be a sinner without sinning. There is no other definition in the Bible of what a sinner is: a sinner is a sinner because he commits sin. Neither is there any other definition of what a sinner is in the councils of men: an evil man is evil because he does evil. In both man's government and God's government men are wicked and evil only if they do evil. They cannot be born a sinner, because the only way to be a sinner is to commit sin:

And we all know that Jesus himself said He didn't come to destroy the previous laws but to fulfill the corrupted teachings of the previous Law. In fact He advises to exceed the spiritual leaders by doing righteous deeds or else we shall in no way enter paradise.

#### **Evidence:**

- (Mat 5:17) Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil.
- (Mat 5:18) For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.
- (Mat 5:19) Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach *them*, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven.
- (Mat 5:20) For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed *the righteousness* of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.

Moreover, the Bible tells us that there cannot be sin where there is no KNOWLEDGE of right and wrong. And the Bible tells us that there cannot be sin without CHOOSING to do evil. The sinner ALWAYS KNOWS he is doing wrong, and the sinner ALWAYS CHOOSES to do wrong even though HE KNOWS it to be wrong. All these truths taught in the Bible demonstrate conclusively that the teaching that we are born sinners is false and unbiblical:

- (Rom 5:13) "Sin is not imputed where there is no law (the law gives the knowledge and is the knowledge of right and wrong).
- (Jas 4:17) Him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin.



It is impossible for babies to be born sinners! Sin is doing evil **knowing** it to be evil! But babies really **know nothing** and really **do nothing** when they are born. Will I be considered harsh and unloving when I say that it is foolishness to speak of babies being born sinners? I hope not.

That is why, Jesus taught that little children are without sin and belong to the kingdom of heaven:

**Evidence:**

- (Mat 18:3) And said, Verily I say unto you, except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.

And the only way we can become as children again after we have sinned is when we stop the sin we are committing and repent to God by asking Him his forgiveness.

- Act 3:19 Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be cleaned out.
- (2Ch 7:14) If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land.
- (Luk 13:3) I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

When you ask three different Christians about the concept of the original sin and how it is passed on from Adam, you will find three different answers all trying to explain their own way.

One of the main reasons why the Christian followers are way less practical in keeping the commandments of God than the Muslims as a whole is because of the reason why the Christian leaders are attempting to redefine sin as a *genetic substance* rather than a choice. If sin is not a choice because of our physical makeup, then there can be no freewill. Sin is a choice, not a constitution. Sin is a transgression of law (1 John 3:4).

If sin is a choice it cancels out constitution, if sin is in our constitution it cancels out the choice! We can't have it both ways, it is impossible! How can one even tell a sinner to repent? Carefully think about this. How can a person feel responsible for something that does not spring from his choice but rather *governs* his choice?

How can he feel responsible? How could there be a struggle between good and evil if all one has is a sinful nature? How can you approach a homosexual, a thief, a drunkard, etc., and tell him he is supposed to stop living that lifestyle if it springs from his nature? How can we rebuke him and encourage him to repent? He would only be acting within his nature, which you tell him he has, a sinful nature! If it is his nature, his constitution, born that way, we can't expect him to stop the sin, period.

Although The evidence presented in Ezekiel 18: 18-22 is clear enough that sin breaking the law and cannot be inherited, the Christian missionaries are not willing to pause for a minute and contemplate when they find shaking verses that contradicts the faith they have been told was the truth their entire life. So what they do is try to verses and misquote them to justify for their guilty mind.

Let us see some of the frequently quoted verses by the Christian missionaries out of context to support the doctrine that men are born sinners.

These texts, when they are taken in their context, do not teach that men are born sinners. On the contrary, they agree with and teach what the whole Bible teaches, that men are created good and upright.

### 1. **First Proof-text Examined**

- (Psa 51:5): "Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me."

This text is not **literal**, it is **figurative**. For example, let us compare Psalm 51:5 with Job 1:21: "Naked came I out of my mother's womb, and naked shall I return thither."

If Psalm 51:5 can be interpreted literally to teach the doctrine that David and all other men are born sinners, then Job 1:21 can also be interpreted literally to teach the doctrine that Job and all other men will go back into their mother's womb: "Naked came I out of my mother's womb, and naked shall I return thither."

Neither Psalm 51:5 nor Job 1:21 should be understood literally. Both texts are figurative expressions. The same rules of interpretation that would permit Psalm 51:5 to teach that little babies are born sinners, if they were also applied to Job 1:21 (or if they were applied to many other passages from the Bible), would permit every kind of perverted and absurd interpretation of the Word of God.

David was not teaching in this passage that he was born a sinner (which would have been an **excuse** for his sins in a Psalm which was clearly a Psalm of **confession**). On the contrary, he was confessing the great magnitude and guilt of the sin he had committed; and he broke out in the language of strong feeling and emotion--the language of figure and symbol--to express the **monstrousness of his sin**: "Behold, I was shapen in iniquity, and in sin did my mother conceive me."

The Psalmist David uses figurative language throughout his Psalms; and he uses several figurative expressions in Psalm 51. Verses five, seven, and eight of Psalm 51 are all figurative expressions. So that if verse five can be used to teach the doctrine that babies are born sinners, then also verse seven can be used to teach the doctrine that hyssop cleanses us from sin:

"Purge me with hyssop, and I shall be clean." Psalm 51:7

Also, verse eight can be used to teach the doctrine that God breaks the bones of the Christian when he sins, and that his broken bones rejoice when he is forgiven:

"Make me to hear joy and gladness; that the bones which thou hast broken may rejoice." Psalm 51:8

And another Psalm, Psalm 58:3, can be used to teach the astonishing doctrine that all babies talk and tell lies from the very moment of their birth:

"The wicked are estranged from the womb: they go astray as soon as they be born, speaking lies." Psalm 58:3

But, who would teach from this last text the doctrine that babies really do speak as soon as they are born? None of these passages should be taken literally. They are all figurative expressions. If they were taken in their literal sense, they would all teach what we know to be contrary to reality and impossible: Men do not enter again into their mother's womb. Hyssop does not purify our sins. Babies do not start speaking as soon as they come out of the womb. And babies are not born sinners!

## 2. Second Proof-text Examined

- (Psalms 58:3): "The wicked are estranged from the womb: they go astray as soon as they be born, speaking lies."

This text is supposed to teach that babies are born sinners; but like Psalm 51:5 it is figurative and not literal. If it were literal, it would teach that babies speak and tell lies as soon as they are born, and that they alienate themselves from God and go astray from him immediately upon coming out of the womb.

But all of this is clearly contrary to reality. We know that babies do not do any of these things at birth. Therefore it is clear that this language is not to be understood literally. If this verse taught that Babies literally came forth from their mother's womb "estranged from God," it would contradict other passages from the Bible that teach that babies are not "estranged from God" at birth. John the baptist was not "estranged from God from his mother's womb." On the contrary, the angel who announced his birth said, "He shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb." Luke 1:15. This fact is hard to reconcile with a literal interpretation of Psalms 51:5 and 58:3. Job also testified that he was a guide to the widow "from his mother's womb." Job 31:18. Job obviously did not mean that from the moment he was a helpless newborn infant that he had been ministering to the needs of the widow. Also, the Psalmist David himself testified that God had been his help "from the womb." Psalm 71:6. It is easy to

see that the phrase "from the womb" is often used in a figurative sense and should not always be understood in its literal sense.

Moreover, ' If one is going to insist upon a literal interpretation of this verse, then let's look at it literally. We have the wicked and the righteous. This implies two classes of individuals: The wicked & The righteous

If it is the wicked who go astray, then the righteous do not go astray. Therefore, not all are born lost. If all are born lost then they cannot go astray. They are already astray! I cannot go outside of a house unless I am first inside it. I cannot leave a place unless I am first there. This verse cannot be used to support that all people are born in a lost state because it teaches the exact opposite. Who goes astray? The wicked. Who then does not go astray? The righteous. The false doctrine of 'Original Sin' teaches one class at birth, not two.

Please read in context the whole Psalm (vss. 1-11). Notice he is not addressing children, but ADULTS, "O congregation.....O ye sons of men?" He also says, "Yea, in heart ye work wickedness; ye weigh the violence of your hands in the earth." He is speaking to adults about their heart and their violence. He's not accusing infants of being violent.

It's not about God taking vengeance on babies. It's about God taking vengeance on the wicked who have done nothing but engaged themselves in violence and bloodshed. Who are the wicked? The wicked are those who forsake God's law.

### 3. Third Proof-text Examined

- (Ephesians 2:3) s 2:3: "And were by nature the children of wrath."

This text is torn completely from its context to teach the horrifying doctrine that little babies are sinners, and condemned and under the wrath of God from birth!

But the word "nature" in this text has nothing to do with "birth" and neither does it have anything to do with "babies." It is speaking of adults and it is speaking of the wicked character of adults. This is clearly evident from its context. The context of Ephesians 2:3 shows that Paul was not speaking of the "birth" of children at all when he used the word "nature." On the contrary, he used the word "nature" to describe the wicked character and the wicked works of men before they were converted.

For example, he calls the attention of the believers in Ephesians 2:1-2 to the fact that before their conversion they had lived in trespasses and sins, and walked in every kind of wickedness, in company with other sinners: "Ye were dead in trespasses and sins; wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience." Then, he continues in verse three speaking of their participation with other sinners in carnality and wickedness: "Among whom also we all had our conversation in time past in the lust of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the

flesh and of the mind; and were by nature (were by our past wicked works) the children of wrath even as others."

It was only after he had described their past life of wicked works that he summed up the guilt and ill desert of their past life with the words: "And WERE by nature the children of wrath, even as others."

We know by the immediate context of this text (as well as the context of the whole Bible) that Ephesians 2:3 is not speaking of being born a sinner or being born under the wrath of God. The immediate context and the context of the whole Bible teaches us that we "were by nature" (were by our past wicked works) the children of wrath, just like the rest of the world that is still living in sin." Eph. 2:3

The word "nature" in the Bible, when it refers to what we are by birth, never refers to a sinful nature. This is made manifest by Romans 2:14:

"The Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law." Romans 2:14

Now the word "nature" in the above text does refer to the nature that we receive at birth. But it is evident that the word "nature" here is not a sinful nature. For, how could a sinful nature cause us to do the things contained in the law? A sinful nature would not cause us to do the things contained in the law--a sinful nature would only cause us to do evil!

The word "nature" is used again in II Peter 1:4, and it is used just like it was used in Ephesians 2:3, speaking of character and life. We saw in Ephesians 2:3 that it spoke of the evil character or the wicked works of men; but we will see in II Peter 1:4 that it speaks of the good character and life of God--it speaks of the life and moral perfections of his divine being:

"That by these (promises) ye might be partakers of the divine nature." II Peter 1:4

Men use Ephesians 2:3 to teach that the "nature" has to refer to being born a sinner. But we see in II Peter 1:4 that the word "nature" is not speaking of a birth at all. It is speaking of the life and moral character of God.

The Bible teaches us that the nature that God has given us is not a sinful nature. It is a good nature that teaches us the difference between good and evil, and a nature that urges us to obey the "law of God written in our hearts." Also the Bible teaches us that all sin and wickedness is against the nature we are born with. But if we were born with a sinful nature not one sin would be against our nature but every sin would agree with and be in harmony with our nature. So the fact that all sin is against our nature proves that we are not born with a sinful nature.

We see, then, that Ephesians 2:3 does not teach that babies are born sinners, and condemned, and under the wrath of God. What it does teach is that all we Christians, who are presently saved from our sins by the marvelous grace of God, were before our salvation, wicked, abandoned sinners, and dead in our trespasses and sins, and under the wrath of God for our sins, just like the rest of the world that still lives in sin and rebellion against God: "And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins...we all had our conversation in time past in the lust of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others." Ephesians 1:1-3

#### 4. Fourth Proof-text Examined

- (Job 14:4) : "Who can bring a clean thing out of an unclean? Not one."

This text is supposed to teach that sinful parents cannot help but bear sinful children. But this interpretation completely ignores the context of this text. The context shows that Job had his eyes wholly on the frail and dying state of man, and not at all upon his moral state. The whole sense of what Job was saying was that "no one can bring other than frail and dying offspring from frail and dying parents." (See the context in Job 14:1-6)

If this text teaches that a sinner invariably produces another sinner, it teaches blasphemy. For if the doctrine of original sin is true, Mary, the mother of Jesus was also born a sinner. And if Job 14:4 really does teach that a sinner must produce another sinner, there could be no way of escaping the conclusion that Jesus also was born a sinner. Hence according to the doctrine of Christianity Jesus himself is sinful and is not fit for the so called sacrifice for the sin of mankind.

#### 5. Fifth Proof-text Examined

- (Job 15:14): "What is man that he should be clean? And he which is born of a woman, that he should be righteous?"

First, these are the words of Eliphaz, and cannot be quoted as inspired truth. God himself testified that Job's comforters did not hold the truth. (See Job 42:7) But suppose we did accept this verse as inspired truth, what does it teach? It teaches nothing at all about a morally depraved physical constitution. It merely implies the sinful condition of all mankind without saying anything about how man got that way.

But again, this text, like the last, if used to teach the constitutional sinfulness of men, would teach that our Jesus who is believed by Christians to be sinless was now born a sinner, because he was a man and was born of a woman.

## 6. Sixth Proof-text Examined

- (Romans 5:12, 18-19: "Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned...Therefore as by the offense of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life. For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous."

This passage is supposed to teach that all men are born sinners, and born under the condemnation and wrath of God because of Adam's transgression.

But this passage does not teach that men are born sinners. It does not teach that they are born under the condemnation and wrath of God. It does not teach that they inherit a sinful nature from Adam. It does not teach that sin is transmitted physically or any other way from Adam to his descendants. It does not teach that the sin of Adam was imputed to his descendants. And it does not teach that men have sinned "in Adam." On the contrary, Romans 5:14 teaches that Adam's descendants did not sin "in him."

"Them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adam's transgression." Romans 5:14

The fact that Paul says there was a body of people "that had not sinned after the similitude of Adam's sin" shows that Paul did not consider Adam's sin to be their sin.

It is true that Paul connects the sin of Adam with the sin and condemnation of all mankind. But it is also true that he connects the obedience of Christ with the salvation and righteousness of all mankind:

"Therefore as by the offence of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life." Romans 5:18

"For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous." Romans 5:19

To interpret the phrase "made sinners" to mean that men are born sinners and become sinners involuntarily and necessarily by receiving a sinful nature from Adam, is a forced and inconsistent interpretation of this passage, for this passage not only says that all men are "made sinners" because of Adam's transgression, it also says that all men are "made righteous" by the obedience of Christ, and that the free gift of life "came upon all men" by Christ Jesus. So for the advocates of the doctrine of original sin to arbitrarily give to the phrases "made sinners" and "came upon all men" the meaning of physical force when these phrases refer to Adam's sin, without giving the same meaning of physical force when they refer to Christ's

righteousness, is an example of a forced and inconsistent interpretation of this passage dictated by a prepossessed belief in the doctrine of original sin.

Paul does not affirm an involuntary, necessary, or irresistible connection between either the sin of Adam and mankind or the righteousness of Christ and mankind. Otherwise, Romans 5:18 would teach the universal salvation of mankind:

"The free gift **came upon all men** unto justification of life." Romans 5:18

We know that universal salvation is not taught in the Bible. Men are not saved involuntarily, automatically, and necessarily because of the obedience of Christ. Nor are they "made sinners" involuntarily, automatically, and necessarily because of the transgression of Adam. But the context of Romans 5:12-21 (and the context of the whole Bible) shows that men are "made sinners" in the same way they are "made righteous," that is, voluntarily or willingly.

Paul did not teach that men are "**made sinners**" involuntarily, by an act of physical force; because he would have been teaching at the same time that all men are "**made righteous**" involuntarily, by an act of physical force. In other words he would have been teaching that **every human being upon the face of the earth is saved involuntarily and necessarily whether he believes the gospel of salvation or not!**

"By the righteousness of one the free gift **came upon all men** unto justification of life." Romans 5:18

It is true that Adam brought sin and death into this world by his transgression; but his sin and his death did not pass upon his descendants. The Bible (Romans 5:12) says that "death passed upon all men, **for that all have sinned**." Men are sinners because **they have sinned**. Sin is an individual, voluntary choice. No human being can sin for another human being. Adam did not sin and could not sin for anyone but himself.

The purpose of the Apostle Paul in this passage is to show that, although the transgression of Adam has been a powerful force to bring sin, death, and condemnation upon all men, the righteousness and obedience of Christ in his work of atonement for sinners has been **much more powerful** to bring grace, reconciliation, righteousness, and eternal life upon all men. (See the overall context in Romans 5:6-21). The following Scriptures show that no man can be guilty or condemned for the sin of Adam--Adam could sin only for himself:

"The **soul that sinneth, it shall die**. The son shall not bear the iniquity of the father, neither shall the father bear the iniquity of the son: the righteousness of the righteous shall be upon him, and the wickedness of the wicked shall be upon him." Ezekiel 18:20

"The fathers shall not be put to death for the children, neither shall the children be put to death for the fathers: **every man shall be put to death for his own sin**." Deuteronomy 24:16



"But he slew not their children, but did as it is written in the law in the book of Moses, where the Lord commanded, saying, The fathers shall not die for the children, neither shall the children die for the fathers, but **every man shall die for his own sin.**" II Chronicles 25:4

"He shall not die for the iniquity of his father, he shall surely live. As for his father, because he cruelly oppressed, spoiled his brother by violence, and did that which is not good among his people, lo, even he shall die in his iniquity." Ezekiel 18:17-18

"The soul that sinneth, it shall die." Ezekiel 18:4

"I will judge...everyone according to his ways, saith the Lord God." Ezekiel 18:30

"That be far from thee to do after this manner, to slay the righteous with the wicked: and that the righteous should be as the wicked, that be far from thee: **Shall not the Judge of all the earth do right?**" Gen. 18:25

## **1.6. THE BIBLE DENIES THE DIVINITY OF JESUS CHRIST:**

This topic contains the following seven (7) arguments which prove that the Bible denies the divinity of Jesus:

- 1) None of the Bible's Writers Believed That Jesus is God**
- 2) Evidence from the Acts of the Apostles**
- 3) Jesus is not All-Powerful, and Not All-Knowing**
- 4) The Greatest Commandment in the Bible and the Quran**
- 5) Paul Believed That Jesus is not God**
- 6) Evidence from the Gospel of John**
- 7) God and Jesus Are Two Separate Beings**

### **1) None of the Bible's Writers Believed That Jesus is God:**

Both Christians and Muslims believe in Jesus, love him, and honor him. They are, however, divided over the question of his divinity.

Fortunately, this difference can be resolved if we refer the question to both the Bible and the Quran, because, both the Bible and the Quran teach that Jesus is not God.

It is clear enough to everyone that the Quran denies the divinity of Jesus, so we do not need to spend much time explaining that.

On the other hand, many people misunderstand the Bible; they feel that the belief in Jesus as God is so widespread that it must have come from the Bible. This article shows quite conclusively that the Bible does not teach that.

The Bible clearly teaches that Jesus is not God. In the Bible God is always someone else other than Jesus.

Some will say that something Jesus said or something he did while on the earth proves that he is God. We will show that the disciples never came to the conclusion that Jesus is God. And those are people who lived and walked with Jesus and thus knew firsthand what he said and did. Furthermore, we are told in the Acts of the Apostles in the Bible that the disciples were being guided by the Holy Spirit. If Jesus is God, surely they should know it. But they did not.

They kept worshipping the one true God who was worshipped by Abraham, Moses, and Jesus (see Acts 3:13).

All of the writers of the Bible believed that God was not Jesus. The idea that Jesus is God did not become part of Christian belief until after the Bible was written, and took many centuries to become part of the faith of Christians.

Matthew, Mark, and Luke, authors of the first three Gospels, believed that Jesus was not God (see Mark 10:18 and Matthew 19:17). They believed that he was the son of God in the sense of a righteous person. Many others too, are similarly called sons of God (see Matthew 23:1-9).

Paul, believed to be the author of some thirteen or fourteen letters in the Bible, also believed that Jesus is not God. For Paul, God first created Jesus, then used Jesus as the agent by which to create the rest of creation (see Colossians 1:15 and 1 Corinthians 8:6). Similar ideas are found in the letter to the Hebrews, and also in the Gospel and Letters of John composed some seventy years after Jesus. In all of these writings, however, Jesus is still a creature of God and is therefore forever subservient to God (see 1 Corinthians 15:28).

Now, because Paul, John, and the author of Hebrews believed that Jesus was God's first creature, some of what they wrote clearly show that Jesus was a pre-existent powerful being. This is often misunderstood to mean that he must have been God. But to say that Jesus was God is to go against what these very authors wrote. Although these authors had this later belief that Jesus is greater than all creatures, they also believed that he was still lesser than God. In fact, John quotes Jesus as saying: **"...the Father is greater than I."** (John 14:28). And Paul declares that the head of every woman is her husband, the head of every man is Christ, and the head of Christ is God (see 1 Corinthians 11:3).

Therefore, to find something in these writings and claim that these teach that Jesus is God is to misuse and misquote what those authors are saying. What they wrote must be understood in the context of their belief that Jesus is a creature of God as they have already clearly said.

So we see then, that some of the later writers had a higher view of Jesus, but none of the writers of the Bible believed that Jesus is God. The Bible clearly teaches that there is only one true God, the one whom Jesus worshipped (see John 17: 3).

In the rest of this article we will explore the Bible in more depth, and deal with the passages which are most often misquoted as proofs of Jesus' divinity. We will show, with God's help, that these do not mean what they are so often used to prove.

## 2) Evidence from the Acts of the Apostles:

Jesus performed many miraculous wonders, and he without doubt said a lot of wonderful things about himself. Some people use what he said and did as a proof that he was God. But his original disciples who lived and walked with him, and were eyewitnesses to what he said and did, never reached this conclusion.

The Acts of the Apostles in the Bible details the activity of the disciples over a period of thirty years after Jesus was lifted up to heaven. Throughout this period they never refer to Jesus as God. They continually and consistently use the title God to refer to someone else other than Jesus.

Peter stood up with the eleven disciples and addressed the crowd saying: **“Men of Israel, listen to this: Jesus of Nazareth was a man accredited by God to you by miracles, wonders and signs, which God did among you through him, as you yourselves know.”** (Acts 2:22).

It was God, therefore, who did the miracles through Jesus to convince people that Jesus was backed by God. Peter did not see the miracles as proof that Jesus is God.

In fact, the way Peter refers to God and to Jesus makes it clear that Jesus is not God. For he always turns the title God away from Jesus. Take the following references for example:

**“God has raised this Jesus...”** (Acts 2:32)

**“God has made this Jesus, whom you crucified, both Lord and Christ.”** (Acts 2:36)

In both passages, the title God is turned away from Jesus. So why he did this, if Jesus was God?

For Peter, Jesus was a servant of God. Peter said: **“God raised up his servant...”** (Acts 3:26). The title servant refers to Jesus. This is clear from a previous passage where Peter declared: **“The God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, the God of our fathers, has glorified his servant Jesus.”** (Acts 3:13).

Peter must have known that Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob never spoke of a Triune God. They always spoke of God as the only God. Here, as in Matthew 12:18, Jesus is the servant of God. Matthew tells us that Jesus was the same servant of God spoken of in Isaiah 42:1. So, according to Matthew and Peter, Jesus is not God, but God’s servant. The Old Testament repeatedly says that God is alone (e.g. Isaiah 45:5).

All of the disciples of Jesus held this view. In Acts 4:24 we are told that the believers prayed to God saying: **“...they raised their voices together in prayer to God. ‘Sovereign Lord,’ they said, ‘you made the heaven and the earth and the sea, and everything in them.’”** It is clear that the

one they were praying to was not Jesus, because, two verses later, they referred to Jesus as **“...your holy servant Jesus, whom you anointed.”** (Acts 4:27).

If Jesus was God, his disciples should have said this clearly. Instead, they kept preaching that Jesus was God’s Christ. We are told in Acts: **“Day after day, in the temple courts and from house to house, they never stopped teaching and proclaiming the good news that Jesus is the Christ.”** (Acts 5:42).

The Greek word “Christ” is a human title. It means “Anointed.” If Jesus was God, why would the disciples continually refer to him with human titles like servant and Christ of God, and consistently use the title God for the one who raised Jesus? Did they fear men? No! They boldly preached the truth fearing neither imprisonment nor death. When they faced opposition from the authorities, Peter declared: **“We must obey God rather than men! The God of our fathers raised Jesus...”** (Acts 5:29-30).

Were they lacking the Holy Spirit? No! They were supported by the Holy Spirit (see Acts 2:3, 4:8, and 5:32). They were simply teaching what they had learnt from Jesus — that Jesus was not God but, rather, God’s servant and Christ.

The Quran confirms that Jesus was the Messiah (Christ), and that he was God’s servant (see the Holy Quran 3:45 and 19:30).

### 3) Jesus is not All-Powerful, and Not All-Knowing:

Christians and Muslims agree that God is all-powerful and all-knowing. The Gospels show that Jesus was not all-powerful, and not all-knowing, since he had some limitations.

Mark tells us in his gospel that Jesus was unable to do any powerful work in his hometown except few things: **“He could not do any miracles there, except lay his hands on a few sick people and heal them.”** (Mark 6:5). Mark also tells us that when Jesus tried to heal a certain blind man, the man was not healed after the first attempt, and Jesus had to try a second time (see Mark 8:22-26).

Therefore, although we hold a great love and respect for Jesus, we need to understand that he is not the all-powerful God.

Mark’s Gospel also reveals that Jesus had limitations in his knowledge. In Mark 13:32, Jesus declared that he himself does not know when the last day will occur, but the Father alone knows that (see also Matthew 24:36).

Therefore, Jesus could not have been the all-knowing God. Some will say that Jesus knew when the last day will occur, but he chose not to tell. But that complicates matters further. Jesus

could have said that he knows but he does not wish to tell. Instead, he said that he does not know. We must believe him. Jesus does not lie at all.

The Gospel of Luke also reveals that Jesus had limited knowledge. Luke says that Jesus increased in wisdom (Luke 2:52). In Hebrews too (Hebrews 5:8) we read that Jesus learned obedience. But God's knowledge and wisdom is always perfect, and God does not learn new things. He knows everything always. So, if Jesus learned something new, that proves that he did not know everything before that, and thus he was not God.

Another example for the limited knowledge of Jesus is the fig tree episode in the Gospels. Mark tells us as follows: **"The next day as they were leaving Bethany, Jesus was hungry. Seeing in the distance a fig tree in leaf, he went to find out if it had any fruit. When he reached it, he found nothing but leaves, because it was not the season for figs."** (Mark 11:12-13).

It is clear from these verses that the knowledge of Jesus was limited on two counts. First, he did not know that the tree had no fruit until he came to it. Second, he did not know that it was not the right season to expect figs on trees.

Can he become God later? No! Because there is only one God, and He is God from everlasting to everlasting (see Psalms 90:2).

Someone may say that Jesus was God but he took the form of a servant and therefore became limited. Well, that would mean that God changed. But God does not change. God said so according to Malachi 3:6.

Jesus never was God, and never will be. In the Bible, God declares: **"Before me no god was formed, nor will there be one after me."** (Isaiah 43:10).

The Bible clearly shows that Jesus was not all-powerful and all-knowing as the true God should be.

#### 4) The Greatest Commandment in the Bible and the Quran:

Some will say that this whole discussion over the divinity of Jesus is unnecessary. They say, the important thing is to accept Jesus as your personal savior. On the contrary, the Bible's writers stressed that, in order to be saved, it is necessary to understand who exactly is God. Failure to understand this would be to violate the first and greatest of all the commandments in the Bible. This commandment was emphasized by Jesus, on whom be peace, when a teacher of the Law of Moses asked him: **"Of all the commandments, which is the most important?" 'The most important one,' answered Jesus, 'is this: Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God, the Lord is one. Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind and with all your strength.'"** (Mark 12:28-30).

Notice that Jesus was quoting the first commandment from the book of Deuteronomy 6:4-5. Jesus confirmed not only that this commandment is still valid, but also that it is the most important of all the commandments. If Jesus thought that he himself is God, why did not he say so? Instead, he stressed that God is one. The man who questioned Jesus understood this, and what the man says next makes it clear that God is not Jesus, for he said to Jesus: **“Well said, teacher,” the man replied. ‘You are right in saying that God is one and there is no other but him.’”** (Mark 12:32).

Now if Jesus was God, he would have told the man so. Instead, he let the man refer to God as someone other than Jesus, and he even saw that the man had spoken wisely: **“When Jesus saw that he had answered wisely, he said to him, ‘You are not far from the kingdom of God.’”** (Mark 12:34). If Jesus knew that God is a trinity, why did not he say so? Why did not he say that God is one in three, or three in one? Instead, he declared that God is one. True imitators of Jesus will imitate him also in this declaration of God’s oneness. They will not add the word three where Jesus never said it.

Does salvation depend on this commandment? Yes, says the Bible! Jesus made this clear when another man approached Jesus to learn from him (see Mark 10:17-29). The man fell on his knees and said to Jesus: “Good teacher, what must I do to inherit eternal life?” Jesus replied: “Why do you call me good? No one is good — except God alone.” (Mark 10:17-18).

By so saying, Jesus made a clear distinction between himself and God. Then he proceeded with the answer to the man’s question about how to get salvation. Jesus told him: **“If you want to enter life, obey the commandments.”** (Matthew 19:17, also see Mark 10:19).

Remember that the most important of all the commandments, according to Jesus, is to know God as the only God. Jesus further emphasized this in the Gospel According to John. In John 17:1, Jesus lifted his eyes to heaven and prayed, addressing God as Father. Then in verse three, he said to God as follows: **“Now this is eternal life: that they may know you, the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom you have sent.”** (John 17:3).

This proves beyond doubt that if people want to get eternal life they must know that the One, whom Jesus was praying to, is the only true God, and they must know that Jesus was sent by the true God. Some say that the Father is God, the Son is God, and the Holy Ghost is God. But Jesus said that the Father alone is the only true God. True followers of Jesus will follow him in this too. Jesus had said that his true followers are those who hold to his teachings. He said: **“If you hold to my teaching, you are really my disciples.”** (John 8:31). His teaching is that people must continue to keep the commandments, especially the first commandment which emphasizes that God is alone, and that God should be loved with all our hearts and all our strengths.

We love Jesus, but we must not love him as God. Today many love Jesus more than they love God. This is because they see God as a vengeful person who wanted to exact a penalty from

them, and they see Jesus as the savior who rescued them from the wrath of God. Yet God is our only savior. According to Isaiah 43:11, God said: **“I, even I, am the LORD, and apart from me there is no savior.”** Also God said according to Isaiah 45:21-22: **“Was it not I, the LORD? And there is no God apart from me, a righteous God and a Savior; there is none but me. Turn to me and be saved, all you ends of the earth; for I am God, and there is no other.”**

The Quran confirms the first commandment and addresses it to all humankind (see the Holy Quran 2:163). And God declares that true believers love Him more than anyone else or anything else (Quran 2:165).

### 5) Paul Believed That Jesus is not God:

Many people use Paul’s writings as proof that Jesus is God. But this is not fair to Paul, because Paul clearly believed that Jesus is not God. In his first letter to Timothy, Paul wrote: **“I charge you, in the sight of God and Christ Jesus and the elect angels, to keep these instructions...”** (1 Timothy 5:21).

It is clear from this that the title God applies not to Christ Jesus, but to someone else. In the following chapter, he again differentiates between God and Jesus when he says: **“In the sight of God, who gives life to everything, and of Christ Jesus, who while testifying before Pontius Pilate made the good confession...”** (1 Timothy 6:13).

Paul then went on to speak of the second appearance of Jesus: **“the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ, which God will bring about in his own time.”** (1 Timothy 6:14-15).

Again, the title God is deliberately turned away from Jesus. Incidentally, many people think that when Jesus is called “Lord” in the Bible that this means “God.” But in the Bible this title means master or teacher, and it can be used for addressing humans (see 1 Peter 3:6).

What is more important, however, is to notice what Paul said about God in the following passage, which clearly shows that Jesus is not God: **“God, the blessed and only Ruler, the King of kings and Lord of lords, who alone is immortal and who lives in unapproachable light, whom no one has seen or can see. To him be honor and might forever.”** (1 Timothy 6:15-16).

Paul said that God alone is immortal. Immortal means he does not die. Check any dictionary. Now, anyone who believes that Jesus died cannot believe that Jesus is God. Such a belief would contradict what Paul said here. Furthermore, to say that God died is a blasphemy against God. Who would run the world if God died? Paul believed that God does not die.

Paul also said in that passage that God dwells in unapproachable light — that no one has seen God or can see him. Paul knew that many thousands of people had seen Jesus. Yet Paul said that no one has seen God, because Paul was sure that Jesus is not God. This is why Paul went on teaching that Jesus was not God, but that he was the Christ (see Acts 9:22 and 18:5).



When he was in Athens, Paul spoke of God as **“The God who made the world and everything in it is the Lord of heaven and earth and does not live in temples built by hands.”** (Acts 17:24). Then he identified Jesus as **“the man he (i.e. God) has appointed.”** (Acts 17:31).

Clearly, for Paul, Jesus was not God, and he would be shocked to see his writings used for proving the opposite of what he believed. Paul even testified in court saying: **“I admit that I worship the God of our fathers...”** (Acts 24:14).

He also said that Jesus is the servant of that God, for we read in Acts: **“The God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, the God of our fathers, has glorified his servant Jesus.”** (Acts 3:13).

For Paul, the Father alone is God. Paul said that there is **“one God and Father of all...”** (Ephesians 4:6). Paul said again: **“...for us there is but one God, the Father . . . and there is but one Lord, Jesus Christ...”** (1 Corinthians 8:6).

Paul’s letter to the Philippians (Philippians 2:6-11) is often quoted as a proof that Jesus is God. But the very passage shows that Jesus is not God. This passage has to agree with Isaiah 45:22-24 where God said that every knee should bow to God, and every tongue should confess that righteousness and strength are in God alone. Paul was aware of this passage, for he quoted it in Romans 14:11. Knowing this, Paul declared: **“I kneel before the Father.”** (Ephesians 3:14).

The letter to the Hebrews (Hebrews 1:6) says that the angels of God should worship the Son. But this passage depends on Deuteronomy 32:43, in the Septuagint version of the Old Testament. This phrase cannot be found in the Old Testament used by Christians today, and the Septuagint version is no longer considered valid by Christians. However, even the Septuagint version, does not say worship the Son. It says let the Angels of God worship God. The Bible insists that God alone is to be worshipped: **“When the LORD made a covenant with the Israelites, he commanded them: ‘Do not worship any other gods or bow down to them, serve them or sacrifice to them. But the LORD, who brought you up out of Egypt with mighty power and outstretched arm, is the one you must worship. To him you shall bow down and to him offer sacrifices. You must always be careful to keep the decrees and ordinances, the laws and commands he wrote for you. Do not worship other gods. Do not forget the covenant I have made with you, and do not worship other gods. Rather, worship the LORD your God; it is he who will deliver you from the hand of all your enemies.’”** (2 Kings 17:35-39).

Jesus, on whom be peace, believed in this, for he also stressed it in Luke 4:8. And Jesus too fell on his face and worshipped God (see Matthew 26:39). Paul knew that Jesus worshipped God (see Hebrews 5:7). Paul taught that Jesus will remain forever subservient to God (see 1 Corinthians 15:28).

## 6) Evidence from the Gospel of John:

The Gospel of John, the fourth Gospel, was completed to its present form some seventy years after Jesus was raised up to heaven. This Gospel in its final form says one more thing about Jesus that was unknown from the previous three Gospels — that Jesus was the Word of God. John means that Jesus was God's agent through whom God created everything else. This is often misunderstood to mean that Jesus was God Himself. But John was saying, as Paul had already said, that Jesus was God's first creature. In the Book of Revelation in the Bible, we find that Jesus is: **"the beginning of God's creation"** (Revelation 3:14, also see 1 Corinthians 8:6 and Colossians 1:15).

Anyone who says that the Word of God is a person distinct from God must also admit that the Word was created, for the Word speaks in the Bible saying: **"The LORD brought me forth as the first of his works..."** (Proverbs 8:22).

This Gospel, nevertheless, clearly teaches that Jesus is not God. If it did not continue this teaching, then it would contradict the other three Gospels and also the letters of Paul from which it is clearly established that Jesus is not God. We find here that Jesus was not co-equal with the Father, for Jesus said: **"...the Father is greater than I."** (John 14:28).

People forget this and they say that Jesus is equal to the Father. Whom should we believe — Jesus or the people? Muslims and Christians agree that God is self-existent. This means that He does not derive his existence from anyone. Yet John tells us that Jesus' existence is caused by the Father. Jesus said in this Gospel: **"...I live because of the Father..."** (John 6:57).

John tells us that Jesus cannot do anything by his own when he quotes Jesus as saying: **"By myself I can do nothing..."** (John 5:30). This agrees with what we learn about Jesus from other Gospels. In Mark, for example, we learn that Jesus performed miracles by a power which was not within his control. This is especially clear from an episode in which a woman is healed of her incurable bleeding. The woman came up behind him and touched his cloak, and she was immediately healed. But Jesus had no idea who touched him. Mark describes Jesus' actions thus: **"At once Jesus realized that power had gone out from him. He turned around in the crowd and asked, 'Who touched my clothes?'"** (Mark 5:30). His disciples could not provide a satisfactory answer, so Mark tells us: **"Jesus kept looking around to see who had done it."** (Mark 5:32). This shows that the power that healed the woman was not within Jesus' control. He knew that the power had gone out of him, but he did not know where it went. Some other intelligent being had to guide that power to the woman who needed to be healed. God was that intelligent being.

It is no wonder, then, that in Acts of the Apostles we read that it was God who did the miracles through Jesus (Acts 2:22).

God did extraordinary miracles through others too, but that does not make the others God (see Acts 19:11). Why, then, is Jesus taken for God? Even when Jesus raised his friend Lazarus from the dead, he had to ask God to do it. Lazarus' sister, Martha, knew this, for she said to Jesus: **"I know that even now God will give you whatever you ask."** (John 11:22).

Martha knew that Jesus was not God, and John who reported this with approval knew it also. Jesus had a God, for when he was about to ascend to heaven, he said: **"I am returning to my Father and your Father, to my God and your God."** (John 20:17).

John was sure that no one had seen God, although he knew that many people had seen Jesus (see John 1:18 and 1 John 4:12). In fact Jesus himself told the crowds, that they have never seen the Father, nor have they heard the Father's voice (John 5:37). Notice that if Jesus was the Father, his statement here would be false. Who is the only God in John's Gospel? The Father alone.

Jesus testified this when he declared that the God of the Jews is the Father (John 8:54). Jesus too confirmed that the Father alone is the only true God (see John 17:1-3). And Jesus said to his enemies: **"...you are determined to kill me, a man who has told you the truth that I heard from God."** (John 8:40). According to John, therefore, Jesus was not God, and nothing John wrote should be taken as proof that he was God — unless one wishes to disagree with John.

## 7) God and Jesus Are Two Separate Beings:

Many people use certain verses of the Bible as proof that Jesus is God. However, all of these verses, when understood in context, prove the opposite!

For example, in Matthew 9:2, Jesus said to a certain man, **"Take heart, son; your sins are forgiven."** Because of this, some say that Jesus must be God since only God can forgive sins. However, if you are willing to read just a few verses further, you will find that the people **"...praised God, who had given such authority to men."** (Matthew 9:8). This shows that the people knew, and Matthew agrees, that Jesus is not the only man to receive such authority from God.

Jesus himself emphasized that he does not speak on his own authority (John 14:10) and he does nothing on his own authority, but he speaks only what the Father has taught him (John 8:28). What Jesus did here was as follows. Jesus announced to the man the knowledge Jesus received from God that God had forgiven the man.

Notice that Jesus did not say, "I forgive your sins," but rather, "your sins are forgiven," implying, as this would to his Jewish listeners, that God had forgiven the man. Jesus, then, did not have the power to forgive sins, and in that very episode he called himself **"the Son of Man"** (Matthew 9:6).

John 10:30 is often used as proof that Jesus is God because Jesus said, **“I and the father are one.”** But, if you read the next six verses, you will find Jesus explaining that his enemies were wrong to think that he was claiming to be God. What Jesus obviously means here is that he is one with the Father in purpose. Jesus also prayed that his disciples should be one just as Jesus and the Father are one. Obviously, he was not praying that all his disciples should somehow merge into one individual (see John 17:11 and 22). And when Luke reports that the disciples were all one, Luke does not mean that they became one single human being, but that they shared a common purpose although they were separate beings (see Acts 4:32). In terms of essence, Jesus and the Father are two, for Jesus said they are two witnesses (John 8:14-18). They have to be two, since one is greater than the other (see John 14:28). When Jesus prayed to be saved from the cross, he said: **“Father, if you are willing, take this cup from me; yet not my will, but yours be done.”** (Luke 22:42).

This shows that they had two separate wills, although Jesus submitted his will to the will of the Father. Two wills mean two separate individuals.

Furthermore, Jesus is reported to have said: **“My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?”** (Matthew 27:46). If one of them forsook the other, then they must be two separate entities.



Again, Jesus is reported to have said: **“Father, into your hands I commit my spirit.”** (Luke 23:46). If the spirit of one can be placed into the hands of another, they must be two separate beings.

In all of these instances, Jesus is clearly subordinate to the Father. When Jesus knelt down and prayed he obviously was not praying to himself (see Luke 22:41). He was praying to his God.

Throughout the New Testament, the Father alone is called God. In fact, the titles “Father” and “God” are used to designate one individual, not three, and never Jesus. This is also clear from the fact that Matthew substituted the title “Father” in the place of the title “God” in at least two places in his Gospel (compare Matthew 10:29 with Luke 12:6, and Matthew 12:50 with Mark 3:35). If Matthew is right in doing so, then the Father alone is God.

Was Jesus the Father? No! Because Jesus said: **“And do not call anyone on earth ‘father,’ for you have one Father, and he is in heaven.”** (Matthew 23:9). So Jesus is not the Father, since Jesus was standing on the earth when he said this.

The Quran seeks to bring people back to the true faith that was taught by Jesus, and by his true disciples who continued in his teaching. That teaching emphasized a continued commitment to the first commandment that God is alone. In the Quran, God directs Muslims to call readers of the Bible back to that true faith. God have said in the Quran:

 Say: "O people of the Book (Christians and Jews)! Come to a word that is just between us and you: that we shall worship none but God, and that we shall associate no partners with Him, and that none of us shall take others as lords beside God."  (Quran, 3:64)

## 1.7. CONTRADICTIONS IN THE OLD TESTAMENT:

The contradictions within the Old Testament show how UNHOLY THE BIBLE IS. Because the bible is a compilation of the writings of different people who are still not known by historical and religious scholars, it resulted in many historical, mathematical and scientific errors etc.

Let us mention some of the contradictions and we will cover the scientific errors in Chapter four (4) of this book.

### 1. Who incited David to count the fighting men of Israel?

- **God** did (2 Samuel 24: 1)
- **Satan** did (I Chronicles 2 1:1)

### 2. In that count how many fighting men were found in Israel?

- **Eight hundred thousand** (2 Samuel 24:9)
- **One million, one hundred thousand** (I Chronicles 21:5)

### 3. How many fighting men were found in Judah?

- **Five hundred thousand** (2 Samuel 24:9)
- **Four hundred and seventy thousand** (I Chronicles 21:5)

### 4. God sent his prophet to threaten David with how many years of famine?

- **Seven** (2 Samuel 24:13)
- **Three** (I Chronicles 21:12)

### 5. How old was Ahaziah when he began to rule over Jerusalem?

- **Twenty-two** (2 Kings 8:26)
- **Forty-two** (2 Chronicles 22:2)

### 6. How old was Jehoiachin when he became king of Jerusalem?

- **Eighteen** (2 Kings 24:8)
- **Eight** (2 Chronicles 36:9)

### 7. How long did he rule over Jerusalem?

- **Three months** (2 Kings 24:8)
- **Three months and ten days** (2 Chronicles 36:9)

**8. The chief of the mighty men of David lifted up his spear and killed how many men at one time?**

- **Eight hundred** (2 Samuel 23:8)
- **Three hundred** (I Chronicles 11: 11)

**9. When did David bring the Ark of the Covenant to Jerusalem? Before defeating the Philistines or after?**

- After (2 Samuel 5 and 6)
- Before (I Chronicles 13 and 14)

**10. How many pairs of clean animals did God tell Noah to take into the Ark?**

- Two (Genesis 6:19, 20)
- Seven (Genesis 7:2). But despite this last instruction only two pairs went into the ark (Genesis 7:8-9)

**11. When David defeated the King of Zobah, how many horsemen did he capture?**

- One thousand and seven hundred (2 Samuel 8:4)
- Seven thousand (I Chronicles 18:4)

**12. How many stalls for horses did Solomon have?**

- Forty thousand (I Kings 4:26)
- Four thousand (2 Chronicles 9:25)

**13. In what year of King Asa's reign did Baasha, King of Israel die?**

- Twenty-sixth year (I Kings 15:33 - 16:8)
- Still alive in the thirty-sixth year (2 Chronicles 16:1)

**14. How many overseers did Solomon appoint for the work of building the temple?**

- Three thousand six hundred (2 Chronicles 2:2)
- Three thousand three hundred (I Kings 5:16)

**15. Solomon built a facility containing how many baths?**

- Two thousand (1 Kings 7:26)
- Over three thousand (2 Chronicles 4:5)

**16. Of the Israelites who were freed from the Babylonian captivity, how many were the children of Pahrath-Moab?**

- Two thousand eight hundred and twelve (Ezra 2:6)
- Two thousand eight hundred and eighteen (Nehemiah 7:11)

**17. How many were the children of Zattu?**

- Nine hundred and forty-five (Ezra 2:8)
- Eight hundred and forty-five (Nehemiah 7:13)

**18. How many were the children of Azgad?**

- One thousand two hundred and twenty-two (Ezra 2:12)
- Two thousand three hundred and twenty-two (Nehemiah 7:17)

**19. How many were the children of Adin?**

- Four hundred and fifty-four (Ezra 2:15)
- Six hundred and fifty-five (Nehemiah 7:20)

**20. How many were the children of Hashum?**

- Two hundred and twenty-three (Ezra 2:19)
- Three hundred and twenty-eight (Nehemiah 7:22)

**21. How many were the children of Bethel and Ai?**

- Two hundred and twenty-three (Ezra 2:28)
- One hundred and twenty-three (Nehemiah 7:32)

**22. Ezra 2:64 and Nehemiah 7:66 agree that the total number of the whole assembly was 42,360. Yet the numbers do not add up to anything close. The totals obtained from each book is as follows:**

- 29,818 (Ezra)
- 31,089 (Nehemiah)

**23. How many singers accompanied the assembly?**

- Two hundred (Ezra 2:65)
- Two hundred and forty-five (Nehemiah 7:67)

**24. What was the name of King Abijah's mother?**

- Michaiah, daughter of Uriel of Gibeah (2 Chronicles 13:2)
- Maachah, daughter of Absalom (2 Chronicles 11:20) But Absalom had only one daughter whose name was Tamar (2 Samuel 14:27)



**25. Did Joshua and the Israelites capture Jerusalem?**

- Yes (Joshua 10:23, 40)
- No (Joshua 15:63) **33. Who was the father of Shelah?**

- Cainan (Luke 3:35-36)
- Arphaxad (Genesis 11:12)

**26. Would Jesus inherit David's throne?**

- Yes. So said the angel (Luke 1:32)
- No, since he is a descendant of Jehoiakim (see Matthew 1:1, I Chronicles 3:16). And Jehoiakim was cursed by God so that none of his descendants can sit upon David's throne (Jeremiah 36:30)

**27. When the Israelites dwelt in Shittim they committed adultery with the daughters of Moab. God struck them with a plague. How many people died in that plague?**

- Twenty-four thousand (Numbers 25:1 and 9)
- Twenty-three thousand (I Corinthians 10:8)

**28. How many members of the house of Jacob came to Egypt?**

- Seventy souls (Genesis 46 & 27)
- Seventy-five souls (Acts 7:14)

**29. To whom did the Midianites sell Joseph?**

- To the Ishmaelites (Genesis 37:28)
- To Potiphar, an officer of Pharaoh (Genesis 37:36)

**30. Who brought Joseph to Egypt?**

- The Ishmaelites bought Joseph and then took Joseph to Egypt (Genesis 37:28)
- The Midianites had sold him in Egypt (Genesis 37:36)
- Joseph said to his brothers I am your brother, Joseph, whom you sold into Egypt (Genesis 45:4)

**31. Does God change his mind?**

- Yes. The word of the Lord came to Samuel: I repent that I have made Saul King... (I Samuel 15:10 to 11)

- No. God will not lie or repent; for he is not a man, that he should repent (I Samuel 15:29)

Yes. And the Lord repented that he had made Saul King over Israel (I Samuel 15:35). Notice that the above three quotes are all from the same chapter of the same book! In addition, the Bible shows that God repented on several other occasions:

- i. The Lord was sorry that he made man (Genesis 6:6)  
I am sorry that I have made them (Genesis 6:7)
- ii. And the Lord repented of the evil which he thought to do to his people (Exodus 32:14).
- iii. (Lots of other such references).

### **32. Wasn't Adam supposed to Die immediately?**

- Adam was told that if and when he eats the forbidden fruit he would die the same day (Genesis 2:17)
- Adam ate the fruit and went on to live to a ripe old age of 930 years (Genesis 5:5)

### **33. Did People live add life spans against God's age limit?**

- God decided that the life-span of humans will be limited to 120 years (Genesis 6:3)
- Many people born after that lived longer than 120. Arpachshad lived 438 years. His son Shelah lived 433 years. His son Eber lived 464 years, etc. (Genesis 11:12-16)

### **34. The Bible says that for each miracle Moses and Aaron demonstrated the magicians did the same by their secret arts. Then comes the following feat:**

- Moses and Aaron converted all the available water into blood (Exodus 7:20-21)
- The magicians did the same (Exodus 7:22). This is impossible, since there would have been no water left to convert into blood.

### **35. Who killed Goliath?**

- David (I Samuel 17:23, 50)
- Elhanan (2 Samuel 21:19)

### **36. Who killed Saul?**

- Saul took his own sword and fell upon it.... Thus Saul died... (I Samuel 31:4-6)
- An Amalekite slew him (2 Samuel 1:1- 16)

How can you then take the bible as the words of God when the Christian scholars themselves do not know the real authors of their own holly books?

## 1.8. CONTRADICTIONS IN THE NEW TESTAMENT

### 1. Who was the father of Joseph, husband of Mary?

- Jacob (Matthew 1:16)
- Hell (Luke 3:23)

### 2. Jesus descended from which son of David?

- Solomon (Matthew 1:6)
- Nathan (Luke 3:31)

### 3. Who was the father of Shealtiel?

- Jechoniah (Matthew 1:12)
- Neri (Luke 3:27)

### 4. Which son of Zerubbabel was an ancestor of Jesus Christ?

- Abiud (Matthew 1:13)
- Rhesa (Luke 3:27) But the seven sons of Zerubbabel are as follows: i. Meshullam, ii. Hananiah, iii. Hashubah, iv. Ohel, v. Berechiah, vi. Hasadiah, viii. Jushabhesed (I Chronicles 3:19, 20). The names Abiud and Rhesa do not fit in anyway.

### 5. Who was the father of Uzziah?

- Joram (Matthew 1:8)
- Amaziah (2 Chronicles 26:1)

### 6. Who was the father of Jechoniah?

- Josiah (Matthew 1:11)
- Jeholakim (I Chronicles 3:16)

### 7. How many generations were there from the Babylonian exile until Christ?

- Matthew says fourteen (Matthew 1:17)
- But a careful count of the generations reveals only thirteen (see Matthew 1:12-16)

**8. Was John the Baptist Elijah who was to come?**

- Yes (Matthew 11: 14, 17:10-13)
- No (John 1:19-21)

**9. Jesus rode into Jerusalem on how many animals?**

- One - a colt (Mark 11:7; cf Luke 19:3 5). And they brought the colt to Jesus and threw their garments on it; and he sat upon it.
- Two - a colt and an ass (Matthew 21:7). They brought the ass and the colt and put their garments on them and he sat thereon.

**10. How did Simon Peter find out that Jesus was the Christ?**

- By a revelation from heaven (Matthew 16:17)
- His brother Andrew told him (John 1:41)

**11. Where did Jesus first meet Simon Peter and Andrew?**

- By the sea of Galilee (Matthew 4:18-22)
- On the banks of river Jordan (John 1:42). After that, Jesus decided to go to Galilee (John 1:43)

**12. When Jesus met Jairus was Jairus daughter already dead?**

- Yes. Matthew 9:18 quotes him as saying, My daughter has just died.
- No. Mark 5:23 quotes him as saying, My little daughter is at the point of death.

**13. Did Jesus allow his disciples to keep a staff on their journey?**

- Yes (Mark 6:8)
- No (Matthew 10:9; Luke 9:3)

**14. Did Herod think that Jesus was John the Baptist?**

- Yes (Matthew 14:2; Mark 6:16)
- No (Luke 9:9)

**15. Did John the Baptist recognize Jesus before his baptism?**

- Yes (Matthew 3:13-14)
- No (John 1:32,33)

**16. Did John the Baptist recognize Jesus after his baptism?**

- Yes (John 1:32, 33)
- No (Matthew 11:2)

**17. According to the Gospel of John, what did Jesus say about bearing his own witness?**

- If I bear witness to myself, my testimony is not true (John 5:3 1)
- Even if I do bear witness to myself, my testimony is true (John 8:14)

**18. When Jesus entered Jerusalem did he cleanse the temple that same day?**

- Yes (Matthew 21:12)
- No. He went into the temple and looked around, but since it was very late he did nothing. Instead, he went to Bethany to spend the night and returned the next morning to cleanse the temple (Mark I 1:1- 17)

**19. The Gospels say that Jesus cursed a fig tree. Did the tree wither at once?**

- Yes. (Matthew 21:19)
- No. It withered overnight (Mark II: 20)

**20. Did Judas kiss Jesus?**

- Yes (Matthew 26:48-50)
- No. Judas could not get close enough to Jesus to kiss him (John 18:3-12)

**21. What did Jesus say about Peters denial?**

- The cock will not crow till you have denied me three times (John 13:38)
- Before the cock crows twice you will deny me three times (Mark 14:30) . When the cock crowed once, the three denials were not yet complete (see Mark 14:72). Therefore prediction (a) failed.

**22. Did Jesus bear his own cross?**

- Yes (John 19:17)
- No (Matthew 27:31-32)

**23. Did Jesus die before the curtain of the temple was torn?**

- Yes (Matthew 27:50-51; Mark 15:37-38)
- No. After the curtain was torn, then Jesus crying with a loud voice, said, Father, into thy hands I commit my spirit! And having said this he breathed his last (Luke 23:45-46)

**24. Did Jesus say anything secretly?**

- No. I have said nothing secretly (John 18:20)
- Yes. He did not speak to them without a parable, but privately to his own disciples he explained everything (Mark 4:34). The disciples asked him Why do you speak to them in parables? He said, To you it has been given to know the secrets of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it has not been given (Matthew 13: 10-11)

**25. Where was Jesus at the sixth hour on the day of the crucifixion?**

- On the cross (Mark 15:23)
- In Pilates court (John 19:14)

**26. The gospels say that two thieves were crucified along with Jesus. Did both thieves mock Jesus?**

- Yes (Mark 15:32)
- No. One of them mocked Jesus, the other defended Jesus (Luke 23:43)

**27. Did Jesus ascend to Paradise the same day of the crucifixion?**

- Yes. He said to the thief who defended him, Today you will be with me in Paradise (Luke 23:43)
- No. He said to Mary Magdalene two days later, I have not yet ascended to the Father (John 20:17)

**28. When Paul was on the road to Damascus he saw a light and heard a voice. Did those who were with him hear the voice?**

- Yes (Acts 9:7)
- No (Acts 22:9)

**29. When Paul saw the light he fell to the ground. Did his traveling companions also fall to the ground?**

- Yes (Acts 26:14)
- No (Acts 9:7)

**30. Did the voice spell out on the spot what Paul's duties were to be?**

- Yes (Acts 26:16-18)
- No. The voice commanded Paul to go into the city of Damascus and there he will be told what he must do. (Acts 9:7; 22: 10)

**31. What did Judas do with the blood money he received for betraying Jesus?**

- He bought a field (Acts 1: 18)
- He threw all of it into the temple and went away. The priests could not put the blood money into the temple treasury, so they used it to buy a field to bury strangers (Matthew 27:5)

**32. How did Judas die?**

- After he threw the money into the temple he went away and hanged himself (Matthew 27:5)
- After he bought the field with the price of his evil deed he fell headlong and burst open in the middle and all his bowels gushed out (Acts 1:18)

**33. Why is the field called Field of Blood?**

- Because the priests bought it with the blood money (Matthew 27:8)
- Because of the bloody death of Judas therein (Acts 1:19)

**34. Who is a ransom for whom?**

- The Son of Man came...to give his life as a ransom for many (Mark 10:45). Christ Jesus who gave himself as a ransom for all... (I Timothy 2:5-6)
- The wicked is a ransom for the righteous, and the faithless for the upright (Proverbs 21:18)

**35. Is the law of Moses useful?**

- Yes. All scripture is... profitable... (2 Timothy 3:16)
- No. . . . A former commandment is set aside because of its weakness and uselessness... (Hebrews 7:18)

**36. What was the exact wording on the cross?**

- This is Jesus the King of the Jews (Matthew 27:37)
- The King of the Jews (Mark 15:26)
- This is the King of the Jews (Luke 23:38)
- Jesus of Nazareth, the King of the Jews (John 19:19)

**37. Did Herod want to kill John the Baptist?**

- Yes (Matthew 14:5)
- No. It was Herodias, the wife of Herod who wanted to kill him. But Herod knew that he was a righteous man and kept him safe (Mark 6:20)

**38. Who was the tenth disciple of Jesus in the list of twelve?**

- Thaddaeus (Matthew 10: 1-4; Mark 3:13 -19)
- Judas son of James is the corresponding name in Lukes gospel (Luke 6:12-16)

**39. Jesus saw a man sit at the tax collectors office and called him to be his disciple. What was his name?**

- Matthew (Matthew 9:9)
- Levi (Mark 2:14; Luke 5:27)

**40. Was Jesus crucified on the daytime before the Passover meal or the daytime after?**

- After (Mark 14:12-17)
- Before. Before the feast of the Passover (John 1) Judas went out at night (John 13:30). The other disciples thought he was going out to buy supplies to prepare for the Passover meal (John 13:29). When Jesus was arrested, the Jews did not enter Pilates judgment hall because they wanted to stay clean to eat the Passover (John 18:28). When the judgment was pronounced against Jesus, it was about the sixth hour on the day of Preparation for the Passover (John 19:14)

**41. Did Jesus pray to The Father to prevent the crucifixion?**

- Yes. (Matthew 26:39; Mark 14:36; Luke 22:42)
- No. (John 12:27)

**42. In the gospels which say that Jesus prayed to avoid the cross, how many times did he move away from his disciples to pray?**

- Three (Matthew 26:36-46 and Mark 14:32-42)
- One. No opening is left for another two times. (Luke 22:39-46)



**43. Matthew and Mark agree that Jesus went away and prayed three times. What were the words of the second prayer?**

- Mark does not give the words but he says that the words were the same as the first prayer (Mark 14:3 9)
- Matthew gives us the words, and we can see that they are not the same as in the first (Matthew 26:42)

**44. What did the centurion say when Jesus dies?**

- Certainly this man was innocent (Luke 23:47)
- Truly this man was the Son of God (Mark 15:39)

**45. When Jesus said My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken Me ?in what language did he speak?**

- Hebrew: the words are Eloi, Eloi ..(Matthew 27:46)
- Aramaic: the words are Eloi, Eloi .. (Mark 15:34)

**46. According to the gospels, what were the last words of Jesus before he died?**

- Father, into thy hands I commit my spirit! (Luke 23:46)
- "It is finished" (John 19:30)

**47. When Jesus entered Capernaum he healed the slave of a centurion. Did the centurion come personally to request Jesus for this?**

- Yes (Matthew 8:5)
- No. He sent some elders of the Jews and his friends (Luke 7:3,6)

**48. Apart from Jesus did anyone else ascend to heaven?**

- No (John 3:13)
- Yes. And Elijah went up by a whirlwind into heaven (2 Kings 2:11)

**49. Who was high priest when David went into the house of God and ate the consecrated bread?**

- Abiathar (Mark 2:26)
- Ahimelech, the father of Abiathar (I Samuel 1:1; 22:20)

**50. Was Jesus body wrapped in spices before burial in accordance with Jewish burial customs?**

- Yes and his female disciples witnessed his burial (John 19:39-40)
- No. Jesus was simply wrapped in a linen shroud. Then the women bought and prepared spices so that they may go and anoint him [Jesus] (Mark 16: 1)

**51. When did the women buy the spices?**

- After the Sabbath was past (Mark 16:1)
- Before the Sabbath. The women prepared spices and ointments. Then, on the Sabbath they rested according to the commandment (Luke 23:55 to 24:1)

**52. At what time of day did the women visit the tomb?**

- Toward the dawn (Matthew 28: 1)
- When the sun had risen (Mark 16:2)

**53. What was the purpose for which the women went to the tomb?**

- To anoint Jesus body with spices (Mark 16: 1; Luke 23:55 to 24: 1)
- To see the tomb. Nothing about spices here (Matthew 28: 1)
- For no specified reason. In this gospel the wrapping with spices had been done before the Sabbath (John 20: 1)

**54. A large stone was placed at the entrance of the tomb. Where was the stone when the women arrived?**

- They saw that the stone was Rolled back (Mark 16:4) They found the stone rolled away from the tomb (Luke 24:2) They saw that the stone had been taken away from the tomb (John 20:1)
- As the women approached, an angel descended from heaven, rolled away the stone, and conversed with the women. Matthew made the women witness the spectacular rolling away of the stone (Matthew 28:1-6)

**55. Did anyone tell the women what happened to Jesus body?**

- Yes. A young man in a white robe (Mark 16:5). Two men ... in dazzling apparel later described as angels (Luke 24:4 and 24:23). An angel - the one who rolled back the stone (Matthew 16:2). In each case the women were told that Jesus had risen from the dead (Matthew 28:7; Mark 16:6; Luke 24:5 footnote)
- No. Mary met no one and returned saying, They have taken the Lord out of the tomb, and we do not know where they have laid him (John 20:2)

**56. When did Mary Magdalene first meet the resurrected Jesus? And how did she react?**

- Mary and the other women met Jesus on their way back from their first and only visit to the tomb. They took hold of his feet and worshipped him (Matthew 28:9)
- On her second visit to the tomb Mary met Jesus just outside the tomb. When she saw Jesus she did not recognize him. She mistook him for the gardener. She still thinks that Jesus body is laid to rest somewhere and she demands to know where. But when Jesus said her name she at once recognized him and called him Teacher. Jesus said to her, Do not hold me... (John 20:11 to 17)

**57. What was Jesus instruction for his disciples?**

- Tell my brethren to go to Galilee, and there they will see me (Matthew 28:10)
- Go to my brethren and say to them, I am ascending to my Father and your Father, to my God and your God (John 20:17)

**58. When did the disciples return to Galilee?**

- Immediately, because when they saw Jesus in Galilee some doubted (Matthew 28:17). This period of uncertainty should not persist
- After at least 40 days. That evening the disciples were still in Jerusalem (Luke 24:33). Jesus appeared to them there and told them, stay in the city until you are clothed with power from on high (Luke 24:49). He was appearing to them during forty days (Acts 1:3), and charged them not to depart from Jerusalem, but to wait for the promise ... (Acts 1:4)

**59. Does every man sin?**

- Yes. There is no man who does not sin (I Kings 8:46; see also 2 Chronicles 6:36; Proverbs 20:9; Ecclesiastes 7:20; and I John 1:810)
- No. True Christians cannot possibly sin, because they are the children of God. Every one who believes that Jesus is the Christ is a child of God.. (I John 5:1). We should be called children of God; and so we are (I John 3:1). He who loves is born of God (I John 4:7). No one born of God commits sin; for God's nature abides in him, and he cannot sin because he is born of God (I John 3:9). But, then again, Yes! If we say we have no sin we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us (I John 1:8)

**60. Who will bear whose burden?**

- Bear one another's burdens, and so fulfill the law of Christ (Galatians 6:2)
- Each man will have to bear his own load (Galatians 6:5)

**61. How many disciples did Jesus appear to after his resurrection?**

- Twelve (I Corinthians 15:5)
- Eleven (Matthew 27:3-5 and Acts 1:9-26, see also Matthew 28:16; Mark 16:14 footnote; Luke 24:9; Luke 24:33)

**62. Where was Jesus three days after his baptism?**

- After his baptism, the spirit immediately drove him out into the wilderness. And he was in the wilderness forty days ... (Mark 1:12-13)
- Next day after the baptism, Jesus selected two disciples. Second day: Jesus went to Galilee - two more disciples. Third day: Jesus was at a wedding feast in Cana in Galilee (see John 1:35; 1:43; 2:1-11)

**63. Was baby Jesus life threatened in Jerusalem?**

- Yes, so Joseph fled with him to Egypt and stayed there until Herod died (Matthew 2:13-23)
- No. The family fled nowhere. They calmly presented the child at the Jerusalem temple according to the Jewish customs and returned to Galilee (Luke 2:21-40)

**64. When Jesus walked on water how did the disciples respond?**

- They worshipped him, saying, Truly you are the Son of God (Matthew 14:33)
- They were utterly astounded, for they did not understand about the loaves, but their hearts were hardened (Mark 6:51-52)

### 1.9. JESUS CHRIST IN ISLAM

Beginning from our father Adam, God chose righteous men or Prophets from among people to guide mankind from darkness to light. The Angel Gabriel (Holy Spirit), who is the leader of all angels of God, is the main agent through whom God sent down revelations to the Prophets and Messengers. The basic message of all the 124,000 prophets and messengers was to teach their people that ***there is only one God and none is worthy of worship except God alone.***

Allah says:

***“And verily We have sent in every nation a messenger, (proclaiming): Worship Allah (alone) and shun false gods. Then of them were some whom Allah guided, and of them were some upon whom misguidance had just hold. So travel through the land and see what was the end of those who denied (the truth)!”*** Al-Nahil(16):36

***“Surely We have inspired you (Muhammad) just as We inspired Noah and the Prophets after him, as We inspired Abraham and Ishmael and Isaac and Jacob and the tribes (of Israel) and Jesus and Job and Jonah and Aaron and Solomon, and David to whom We gave the Zabur, and Messengers whom we have told you about and Messengers whom we have not told you about, and Moses to whom God spoke directly - Messengers who brought good news and a warning so that mankind would not have any argument against God after the Messengers; and God has always been Mighty, Wise. “***  
(Qur'an 4: 163-165).

So, when the Jews corrupted the message of Moses, Allah sent Jesus Christ (Messiah) to reestablish the Law of Moses and to teach the wisdom of Gospel as well.

Allah says:

***“And We caused Jesus, son of Mary, to follow in their footsteps, **confirming that which was (revealed) before him**, and We bestowed on him **the Gospel** wherein is guidance and a light, confirming that which was (revealed) before it in the Torah a guidance and an admonition unto those who ward off (evil).”*** Al-Maidah(5):46

Just like Moses, Jesus too was one of the messengers of God sent to the children of Israel to reestablish the Law of Moses. Jesus himself confirms this reality in the bible.

- (Mat 5:17-18) **“Think not that I am come to destroy the law**, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, **but to fulfill**. For verily I say unto you, till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.”

And Allah says:

***“And when Jesus son of Mary said: O Children of Israel! Lo! I am the messenger of Allah unto you, confirming that which was (revealed) before me in the Torah, and bringing good tidings of a messenger who cometh after me, whose name is the Praised One (Ahmad). Yet when he has come unto them with clear proofs, they say: This is clearly magic”.***

God makes it perfectly clear that both Jesus and Mary were only human beings:

***“The Messiah son of Mary was only a Messenger like the Messengers who went before him and his mother was a truthful woman and they both used to eat food. See how we clarify the signs for them -and then see how they make up lies! Say: 'Do you worship what does not have any power to either harm or benefit you, instead of God?' And it is God Who is the One Who Hears, the One Who Knows.” (Qur'an 5: 75-76).***

The birth of Jesus was miraculous. He was created without a father from the righteous and most beloved servant of Allah named Merriam. Allah has chosen the mother of Jesus as the best of all women.

Allah says:

***“...And (remember) when the angels said, 'O Mary, surely God has chosen you, and He has made you pure, and He has preferred you above all women in all the worlds. o Mary, be obedient to your Lord, and prostrate and bow down in worship (before Him) with those who bow down in worship.'...” Al-Quran 3:***

Allah sent an angel to inform Mary the good news of a child she is going to give birth to.

***“And mention Mary in the Book -when she withdrew from her people to a place in the east and chose seclusion from them, then We sent Our spirit (the angel Gabriel) to her, and he appeared to her as a perfect man. She said, 'Surely I seek refuge in the Merciful One from you, if you fear God.' He said, 'Surely I am only a Messenger from your Lord, to give you news of a pure son.' She replied, 'How can I have a son when no man has touched me, and when I have never been immoral?' He said, 'Just like that -your Lord says, "It is easy for Me and We shall make him a sign for mankind, and a mercy from Us -and it is something which has already been decreed.”***

When Mary then went out of the town to give birth to Jesus and when she was in pain she was comforted with flowing water and fresh dates.

***“And so she conceived him, and she withdrew with him to a place which was far away and the pains of childbirth drove her to the trunk of a palm tree -she said, 'O would that I had died before this and become nothing, forgotten!' And then it was***

***said to her from below her, 'Do not be sad -your Lord has placed a small stream beneath you, and shake the trunk of the palm tree towards you -you will make fresh ripe dates fall around you. So eat and drink and be comforted. And if you meet any man, then say, "Surely I have made a vow to the Merciful One to fast, and I may not speak to anyone today."***

Unlike the bible wherein Jesus' first miracle was changing the water into a wine, Jesus' first miracle according to the Quran, however, is his ability to speak when he was just a newly born infant resting on his mother's arms.

After giving birth, Mary took the infant Jesus to her people but when they accused her of adultery, but Jesus defended his mother miraculously by telling them that he was a servant and prophet of God and etc they were astonished to see a newly born child speak.

***"Then she brought him to her people, carrying him. They said, 'O Mary, you have indeed come with something deceitful! O sister of Aaron, your father was not a wicked man, and your mother was never immoral!' Then she pointed to him, they said, 'How can we talk to a baby in his cradle?' He said, 'Surely I am the slave of God He has given me the Book, and He has made me a Prophet, and He has made me blessed wherever I may be, and He has made the prayer and zakat obligatory for me as long as I live, and He has made me obedient towards the one who bore me, and He has not made me tyrannical or ungrateful-and peace be on me the day I was born, and the day I die, and the day I shall be brought back to life!'***

***Such was Jesus son of Mary -(this is) a statement of the truth about which they are in doubt. It is not how it is for God to choose any son -glory be to Him! When He decrees something, then all He says to it is 'Be!' and it is.***

***'And surely God is my Lord and your Lord, so worship Him. This is the straight path.'***  
***"(Qur'an 19:16-36).***

During his life time, Jesus made many miracles in order to show evidences that he was a messenger from God. Among his miracles were the shaping of birds from clay and bringing them to real birds, healing the lepers and those that were born blind and raising the dead by the permission of God. However the conflict between those who accepted Jesus and those who rejected him often focused around his extraordinary miracles, which he always attributed to God and not to himself. It is not surprising, in view of these miracles, that some of those who accepted Jesus did so rather too enthusiastically, and in so doing mistakenly considered him to be the 'son' of God, thereby idolizing him and making him an object of worship. God refers to this misconception in the following passage from Surat al-Ma'ida, which refers to God's questioning all His Messengers on the Last Day:

Allah says:

***“On the Day when God will gather all the Messengers together and will say, 'What was the response to you?' they will say, 'We do not know -surely it is only you who knows what is hidden.'***

***And God will say, 'O Jesus son of Mary, remember My blessing on you and on your mother -how I strengthened you with the pure spirit (the angel Gabriel), so that you spoke to people from the cradle and as a man; and how I taught you the Book, and wisdom and the Torah and the Injil; and how you made the shape of a bird from clay by My permission, and then breathed into it, so that it became a bird by My permission; and how you healed him who was born blind and the leper by My permission; and how you raised the dead by My permission; and how I restrained the Tribe of Israel from harming you when you came to them with clear proofs, and those of them who disbelieved said, "Surely this is nothing but magic!" And (remember) when I inspired the disciples to, "Believe in Me and in My Messenger," and they said, "We believe, so bear witness that we are Muslims!"'***

***...And when God says, 'O Jesus son of Mary, did you say to people, "Take me and my mother as two gods instead of God,"?' he will reply, 'Glory be to You-it was not for me to say what I had no right to say! If I ever said that, then You would certainly know it. You know what is in me, and I do not know what is in You-surely it is only you Who knows what is hidden. I only told them what You commanded me -to, "Worship God, my Lord and your Lord," and while I dwelt among them I was a watcher over them, and when You took me up, then You were a Watcher over them-and You watch over everything. If You punish them, then surely they are Your slaves, and if You forgive them, then surely You are the Mighty, the Wise.'***

***God will say, 'This is a Day when the truthful will benefit from their truthfulness, for gardens underneath which rivers flow will be theirs, dwelling there for ever -God is pleased with them and they are pleased with Him that is the great success.' The dominion of the heavens and the earth and whatever is in them belongs to God and He has power over everything.” (Qur'an 5: 109-120).***

Allah warns those who proclaimed that Jesus was the son of God in literal meaning.

***“Those who say, 'surely God is the Messiah, son of Mary,' have indeed disbelieved. Say: ' And who would have any power at all over God if He wished to destroy the Messiah son of Mary, and his mother, and whoever is on earth, all together? And dominion over the heavens and the earth and what is between them belongs to God - He creates what He wants -and God has power over everything.” (Qur'an 5: 17).***

***“They say: 'God has chosen a son.' -Glory be to Him! He is the Self-Sufficient! Whatever is in the heavens and whatever is in the earth belongs to Him. You do not have any***



***authority for (saying) this. Why do you say things about God of which you have no knowledge? Say: 'Surely those who make up a lie about God will not be successful.' They will pass their time in this world, and then to us they will return, and then We will make them taste intense punishment because they used to disbelieve.'***  
*(Qur'an 10: 68-70).*

When Jesus exposed the lie of those hypocrite religious leaders who claimed to have been teaching the correct teachings of Moses, They plotted to kill him once and for all. However Allah saved him from their plot by raising him unto himself alive. Whosoever the Jews claimed to have killed or crucified, was definitely not Jesus. He was neither killed nor was he crucified.

Allah says:

***"***  
***"And because of their saying (in boast): We killed the Messiah Jesus, son of Mary, the Messenger of Allah, but they killed him not, nor crucified him, but it was made to Appear so to them, and those who differ therein are full of doubts. They have no (Certain) knowledge, except the following of conjecture. For surely; they killed him Not. But Allah raised him up unto Himself, and Allah is All-Powerful, All-Wise"***

The Qur'an, Al-Nissa(4):157-158.

Closer to the end time of this world, God will send Jesus back to earth to destroy the Anti-Christ and his followers and to establish peace using the last holy book of God, Al-Quran. Then Jesus eventually dies and the Muslims will bury him and will do the 'Salat' prayer on him. And after a while when all those who believed in God passed away and only the evil doers with no faith remain on the face of the earth, God destroys the world. The angels finally would be dead and only the Almighty Allah remains. That is when the resurrection of the dead begins and Justice will finally be served. That day is called the Day of Judgment.

## CHAPTER TWO

### PROPHECY OF MOHAMMED IN THE BIBLE

#### 1. Isaiah 29:12

One of the most powerful verses of the Bible prophesying the coming of Prophet Mohammad is **Isaiah 29:12** which says:

*"Then the book will be given to the one who is illiterate, saying, 'Please read this.' And he will say 'I cannot read'" (Isaiah 29:12)*

This verse fits perfectly Prophet Mohammad (PBUH) because he was illiterate and the Quran refers to him as such in **verse 157 of Sura 7:**

*"The Messenger, the Prophet, the illiterate, whom they can find written about, with them, in the Torah and the Gospel" (Al Quran 7:157)*

Furthermore, it is known that in the first revelation of the Quran to Prophet Mohammad, Angel Gabriel asked Prophet Mohammad (PBUH) to read. Prophet Mohammad (PBUH) replied: "I am not someone who can read". Then, Angel Gabriel then started reciting the first revelation of the Quran which are the first 5 verses of Chapter 96, which start with: "Read in the name of your Lord ..."

#### 2. Deuteronomy 18: 18

We read the following words addressed to Moses in the Book of **Deuteronomy Chapter 18: verse 18:**

*"I will raise them up a prophet from among their brethren, like unto thee ; and I will put my words in his mouth." (Deuteronomy 18: 18)*

"A prophet from among their brethren" means from the brethren of the Jews, meaning the Arabs. Abraham had two sons. His first born son was Ishmael (from whom the Arabs descend) and his second born son is Isaac (from whom Jews descend).

"Like unto thee" means the expected Prophet will be like Moses. Jesus is not like Moses, but Mohammad (PBUH) is like Moses.

### Comparison between Moses, Muhammad and Jesus (Peace be upon them)

Comparison Title	Moses	Muhammad (PBUH)	Jesus
<b>1. Father and Mother</b>	Moses had a father and a mother.	Muhammad also had a father and a mother.	But Jesus had only a mother, and no human father.
<b>2. Birth</b>	Moses was born in the normal, natural course, i.e. by the physical association of man and woman.	Muhammad was born in the normal, natural course, i.e. by the physical association of man and woman.	But Jesus was created by a special miracle.
<b>3. Marriage</b>	Moses married and begot children.	Muhammad also married and begot children.	But Jesus remained a bachelor all his life.
<b>4. People's Acceptance</b>	<p>Moses was accepted as a prophet by his people.</p> <p>No doubt the Jews gave endless trouble to Moses and they murmured in the wilderness, but as a nation, as a whole, they acknowledged that Moses was a Messenger of God sent to them.</p>	<p>Muhammad was also accepted as a prophet by his people.</p> <p>The Arabs of Mecca persecuted prophet Mohammad &amp; his followers and he had to flee from the city of Mecca to Medina. However, by the time of his death, the Arab nation as a whole had accepted him as a Messenger of God.</p>	<p>But according to the Bible- "He (Jesus) came unto his own, but his own received him not" (John 1:11).</p> <p>And even today, after more than two thousand years, Jesus' people (the Jews) still do not recognize him as a Messiah.</p>
<b>5. "Other-Worldly" Kingdom (the power or prerogative of inflicting capital punishment)</b>	Moses was a prophet as well as a king. Moses possessed the power of inflicting capital punishment. For example, the	Muhammad was also a prophet as well as the head of the Islamic State.	Jesus claimed a spiritual kingdom only; in other words he only claimed to be a prophet. When Jesus was dragged

	<p>Israelite who was found picking up firewood on the Sabbath Day, Moses had him stoned to death. There are other crimes also mentioned in the Bible for which capital punishment was inflicted on the Jews at the behest of Moses</p>		<p>before the Roman Governor, Pontius Pilate, charged for sedition, Jesus made a convincing point in his defense to refute the false charges: Jesus answered, "My kingdom is not of this world': If my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews; but now is my kingdom not from hence". (John 18:36)</p>
<p><b>6. New Laws</b></p>	<p>Moses brought new laws and new regulation to his people. Moses not only gave the Ten Commandments to the Israelites, but a very comprehensive ceremonial law for the guidance of his people.</p>	<p>Muhammad also brought new laws and new regulations to his people based on the Quran.</p> <p>He came to a people steeped in barbarism and ignorance. They married their step-mothers; they buried their daughters alive; drunkenness, adultery, idolatry and gambling were the order of the day.</p> <p>From this abject barbarism, Muhammad elevated them, into torch-</p>	<p>As regards Jesus, when the Jews felt suspicious of him that he might be an imposter with designs to pervert their teachings, Jesus took pains to assure them that he had not come with a new religion- no new laws and no new regulations. Jesus said: "Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For verily</p>

		bearers of light and learning. Muhammad gave his people a Law and Order they never had before.	I say unto you, till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled". (Matthew 5:17-18).
<b>7. Departure</b>	Moses died a natural death.	Muhammad also died a natural death.	But according to Christianity, Jesus was violently killed on the cross.
<b>8. Final Abode</b>	Moses lies buried in earth.	Muhammad also lies buried in earth.	But according to the Christians, Jesus rests in heaven.

"I will put my words in his mouth" describes perfectly how Mohammad (PBUH) received revelation of the exact words of God in the form of the verses of the Quran. Whereas the Gospel was inspired by God, but not the exact/literal word of God.

If this verse does not apply to Prophet Muhammad (PBUH), the prophecy in this verse will be unfulfilled. Prophet Jesus himself never claimed to be the Prophet alluded to in this verse. Even his disciples were of the same opinion: they looked to the second coming of Jesus for the fulfillment of this prophecy (Acts 3: 17-24). So far it is undisputed that the first coming of Jesus was not the advent of this anticipated prophet and his second advent can hardly fulfill the prophecy. Jesus, as is believed by his Church, will appear as a Judge and not as a law-giver; but the promised one has to come with a "fiery law" in "his right hand."

Muhammad Asad (formerly known as Leopold Weiss), a Jewish scholar who converted to Islam said:

The 'brethren' of the children of Israel are obviously the Arabs, and particularly the Musta'ribah ('Arabianized') group among them, which traces its descent to Ishmael and Abraham: and since it is this group that the Arabian Prophet's own tribe, the Quraish, belonged, the above biblical passages must be taken as referring to his advent."

### 3. John 1:19-21

In the Bible we read of the test that the Jews applied to Jesus (pbuh) in order to ascertain his truthfulness. The Jews had a prophecy that required Elias to come before Jesus (pbuh): ***“Elias verily cometh first”*** Mark 9:12. They had not seen Elias yet so they doubted the claim of Jesus (pbuh). Jesus, however, responded to them that Elias had already come but that they did not recognize him. In Matthew 17:12-13 we read: ***“But I say unto you, That Elias is come already, and they knew him not.....Then the disciples understood that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.”*** John, however refutes the claims of Jesus (pbuh). This is one of the Christian's “dark sayings of Jesus” that their scholars have tried to reconcile for centuries. We will leave this matter for them to work out among themselves (This matter is resolved in the Gospel of Barnabas, but that is a topic for another day).

Now, in John 1:19-21 we read ***“And this is the record of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem to ask him, Who art thou? And he confessed, and denied not; but confessed, I am not the Christ. And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not. Art thou that prophet? And he answered, No.”***

We notice that there are three distinct prophecies here: 1) Elias, 2) Jesus, 3) That prophet. The Jews were not waiting for two prophecies, but three. This can be further clarified by reading John 1:25: ***“And they asked him, and said unto him, Why baptizes thou then, if thou be:***

- a) ***not that Christ,***
- b) ***nor Elias,***
- c) ***neither that prophet?”***

If “that prophet” were Jesus (PBUH) wouldn't the third question in both verses be redundant? If we are to believe that “that prophet” is the holy ghost, then did John *look* like a ghost? Further, we must remember that “That prophet” can not apply to any prophet before the time of Jesus (PBUH) because at the time of Jesus (PBUH) the Jews were *still waiting for all three*. Notice how when we let the Bible speak for itself, without forcing the holy spirit or other supernatural meanings on it in the commentary, or forcing three questions to be only two, how clear these verses become. For much more evidence in this regard, please read chapter 13 regarding the Dead Sea Scroll prophecies of “two messiahs” and how the Jews who wrote the scrolls and who were waiting for the coming of Jesus (PBUH) clearly state in these scrolls that they were waiting for not one, but *TWO* messiahs, the first of which would be announced by an eschatological prophet

### 4. Deuteronomy 33: 2

In ascertaining the identity of the promised prophet, **the other prophecy of Moses** is, however, very helpful where it speaks of the shining forth of God from Paran (Mecca).

The words in the Book of **Deuteronomy, Chapter 33: verse 2**, run as follows:

*"And he (Moses) said, the Lord came from Sinai, and rose up from Seir unto them; **he shined forth from mount Paran**, and he came with **ten thousands of saints**; from his right hand went a **fiery law** for them." (Deuteronomy 33: 2)*

In this verse, the Lord (through his Prophets/Messengers) is compared with the sun. He comes from Sinai, he rises from Seir, but he shines in his full glory from Paran (Mecca), where he appear with ten thousands of saints (followers) with a fiery law (Quran) in his right hand.

"He comes from Sinai" refers to Moses. "He rises from Seir (mountain in Palestine)" refers to Jesus. "He shines in his full glory from Paran (Mecca)" refers to prophet Mohammad.

None of the Israelites, including Jesus, had anything to do with Paran (Mecca). Please note also the order in which the three locations are mentioned, Sinai, Seir, and Paran. This is a further indication that the prophet from Paran will appear after Jesus.

"God heard the boy crying, and the angel of God called to Hagar (Abraham's second wife and the mother of Abraham's first son, Ishmael) from heaven and said to her, "What is the matter, Hagar? Do not be afraid; God has heard the boy (Ishmael) crying as he lies there. Lift the boy up and take him by the hand, for **I will make him into a great nation**. Then God opened her eyes and she saw a well of water. So she went and filled the skin with water and gave the boy a drink. **God was with the boy** as he grew up. He lived in the desert and became an archer. While he was living in the Desert of **Paran**, his mother (Hagar) got a wife for him from Egypt." (Genesis 21: 17-21)

Ishmael, through his second-born child, Kedar, gave descent to the Arabs of Paran (Mecca). The other Arabs are descendents of Ishmael's other children. The above verses of Genesis 21 make it clear that Ishmael was a child blessed by God, so God saved him and "**God was with the boy** as he grew up". Furthermore, God promises to "**make him into a great nation**", meaning to make him the father of a great nation (the Arabs).

"And these are the names of the sons of Ishmael, by their names, according to their generations: the firstborn of Ishmael, Nebajoth; and Kedar, and Adbeel, and Mibsam, And Mishma, and Dumah, and Massa, Hadar, and Tema, Jetur, Naphish, and Kedemah. These are the sons of Ishmael, and these are their names, by their towns, and by their castles; twelve princes according to their nations." (**Genesis 25: 13-16**)

Since Prophet Muhammad (PBUH) traces his ancestry to Ishmael through Kedar and he appeared as a prophet in the wilderness of Paran (Mecca) and re-entered Mecca victoriously with ten thousand followers, in a bloodless conquest, after 8 years of having to flee from Mecca and migrate to Medina, and brought a fiery law (Quran) from God, isn't the prophecy above-mentioned fulfilled to its very letter?

The mention of "he came with 10,000 saints" in Deuteronomy 33 is very significant. Read the whole history of the wilderness of Paran and you will find no other similar event in which Mecca was conquered. Prophet Muhammad comes with 10,000 followers from Medina and re-enters Mecca. He gives the fiery law to the world, which reduced to ashes all other laws.

### Genealogical Table from Abraham to Muhammad

<b>Abraham</b> (Ibrahim)	---	was	father	of
Ishmael(Ismail)	---	was	father	of
<b>Kedar</b> (Qaydar)	---	was	father	of
'Adnan	---	was	father	of
Ma'ad	---	was	father	of
Nizar	---	was	father	of
Mudar	---	was	father	of
Ilyas	---	was	father	of
Mudrikah	---	was	father	of
Khuzaimah	---	was	father	of
Kinanah	---	was	father	of
Al-Nadr	---	was	father	of
Malik	---	was	father	of
Quraysh(Fihr)	---	was	father	of
Ghalib	---	was	father	of
Lu'ayy	---	was	father	of
Ka'ab	---	was	father	of
Murrah	---	was	father	of
Kilab	---	was	father	of
Qusay	---	was	father	of
'AbdManaf	---	was	father	of
Hashim	---	was	father	of
'AbdulMuttalib	---	was	father	of
'Abdullah	---	was	father	of
<b>MUHAMMAD</b>				

#### 5. Isaiah 60: 1-7

*"Arise, shine for thy light is come, and the glory of the Lord is risen upon thee ... The multitude of camels shall cover thee, the dromedaries of **Midian and Ephah**; all they from Sheba shall come.. All the **flocks of Kedar** shall be gathered together unto thee, the rams of Nebaioth shall minister unto thee: they shall come up with acceptance on mine altar, and I will glorify the **house of my glory**." (Isaiah 60: 1-7)*



Prophet Muhammad is the holy descendant of Ishmael through **Kedar**, who settled in the wilderness of **Paran**. Muhammad is the only Prophet through whom the Arabs received revelation at the time when the darkness had covered the earth. Through him, God shone from **Paran (Mecca)**. Mecca is the only place where the House of God is glorified and the flocks of Kedar come with acceptance on its altar.

#### 6. Isaiah 21: 13-17

*"The burden upon **Arabia**. In the forest in Arabia shall ye lodge, O ye travelling companies of Dedanim. The **inhabitants of the land of Tema brought water to him** that was thirsty, they prevented with their bread him that fled. For **they fled from the swords** and from the bent bow, and from the grievousness of war. For thus hath the Lord said unto me, **Within a year**, according to the years of an hireling, and all the **glory of Kedar shall fail**: And the residue of the number of archers, the mighty of the children of Kedar, shall be diminished."* (Isaiah 21: 13-17)

Prophet Muhammad (PBUH) was persecuted by his people and had to leave Mecca. He was thirsty and fled to **Tema (Medina)** from the drawn sword and the bent bow, and within about a year after his flight, the Meccans (the mighty men of Children of Kedar) fought the Muslims led by Prophet Mohammad. The Meccans were defeated by the Muslims in the battle of Badr and all the glory of Kedar started to vanish.

If Prophet Muhammad is not to be accepted as the fulfillment of all these prophecies, they will still remain unfulfilled. "**The house of my glory**" referred to in Isaiah 60: 7 is the **House of God (the Kaaba) in Mecca** and not the Church of Christ as thought by Christian commentators. The flocks of Kedar (Arabs of Mecca), as mentioned in Isaiah 60: 7 have never come to the Church of Christ in mass numbers.

#### 7. Habakkuk 3: 3

"God came from Teman, and the Holy One from mount Paran. Selah. His glory covered the heavens, and the earth was full of his praise." (**Habakkuk 3: 3**)

This verse says "God came from Teman" *because the message of Islam did not become established until prophet Mohammad migrated to "Teman" or "Tema" (Medina)*. "The Holy One from mount Paran" refers to the fact that prophet Mohammad was born in Paran (Mecca) and the Quran was revealed to him while he was meditating in a cave in a mountain near Mecca. "His glory covered the heavens" is validated by the fact that Muslims believe that Allah and his angels pray for prophet Mohammad. "The earth was full of his praise" refers the way Muslims always praise Prophet Mohammad (PBUH) whenever they mention him and also in their 5 daily prayers.

## 8. Psalms 72: 8-17

He shall have dominion also from sea to sea, and from the river unto the ends of the earth. They that dwell in the wilderness shall bow before him; and his enemies shall lick the dust....**Prayer also shall be made for him continually; and daily shall he be praised...**His name shall endure forever; his name shall be continued as long as the sun: and men shall be blessed in (him: all nations shall **call him blessed.**"

Psalms 72 is about Prophet Mohammed (PBUH). Islam spread and ruled across continents. Those in the wilderness ( deserts of Arabia) offered allegiance to him. Muslims whenever they mention Prophet Mohammad's name, they pray for him and praise him; in Arabic, Muslims say "Salla Allah Alayhi wa Sallam" which means "May Allah pray for him and bestow peace upon him" and during each of their 5 daily prayers, Muslims praise Prophet Mohammad. "All nations shall call him blessed" accurately describes the fact that his name "Mohammad" means "the blessed or praised One". Today, the name "Mohammad" is the most common name for boys in the world.

## 9. Isaiah 42: 1-13

*"Behold my servant, whom I uphold; **Mine Elect**, in whom my soul delighteth; I have put my spirit upon him: he shall bring forth judgment to the Gentiles...Let the wilderness and the cities thereof lift up their voice, the **villages that Kedar doth inhabit**: let the inhabitants of the rock sing, let them shout from the top of the mountains. Let them give glory unto the Lord, and declare His praise in the islands. The Lord shall go forth as a mighty man, he shall stir up jealousy like a man of war, he shall cry, yea, roar; he shall prevail against his enemies."* **(Isaiah 42: 1-13)**

"Mine Elect" means My Chosen One. "Al-Mustafa" is one of titles of prophet Muhammad (PBUH) mentioned in the Quran which means The Chosen One (or Anointed One).

"He shall bring forth judgment to the Gentiles" refers to the fact that prophet Mohammad was sent according to the Quran as a "mercy to all humanity" which indicates his mission was to deliver his message to all people including the Gentiles, unlike the previous prophets including Jesus who were sent to preach only to specific people.

"The Rock" could refer to the sacred Black Rock which housed on a corner of the Ka'ba from the time of Abraham.

The "singing" refers to recitation of the Quran.

"Let them shout from the top of the mountains" refers to Muslims' call for prayer.

"A man of war, he shall cry, yea, roar; he shall prevail against his enemies" refers to Prophet Mohammad acting as a military leader and prevail against the enemies.

"Kedar" is the second son of Ishmael, the father of the Arabs of Mecca.

#### 10. John 4: 19-23

<sup>19</sup>"Sir," the woman said, "I can see that you are a prophet.

<sup>20</sup>Our fathers worshiped on this mountain, but you Jews claim that the place where we must worship is in Jerusalem."

<sup>21</sup>Jesus declared, "Believe me, woman, **a time is coming when you will worship the Father neither on this mountain nor in Jerusalem.**

<sup>22</sup>You Samaritans worship what you do not know; we worship what we do know, for salvation is from the Jews.

<sup>23</sup>Yet a time is coming and has now come when the true worshipers will worship the Father in spirit and truth, for they are the kind of worshipers the Father seeks. **(John 4: 19-23 )**

Jesus here is prophesying the faithful believers will become Muslims and worship God neither in the Samaritans' Mountain nor in Jerusalem, but rather in a totally different location. It obvious that this **new worship location** is **Mecca**.

#### 11. Micah 4: 1-2

*" But in the last days it shall come to pass, that **the mountain of the House of the LORD** shall be established in the top of the mountains, and it shall be exalted above the hills; and people shall flow unto it. And many nations shall come, and say, Come, and let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, and to the house of the God of Jacob; and he will teach us of his ways, and we will walk in his paths: ... "* **(Micah 4: 1-2)**

During pilgrimage, Muslims must go to **Mount Arafat in Mecca** as part of the pilgrimage rituals. The main House of Worship (**House of the Lord**) of Muslims is in Mecca and that is where the Ka'ba is located. These verses obviously describe the **Mount Arafat**, the most blessed mountain of the world, and the nation of Muhammad, upon him be peace, together with the prayers and praises that would be offered by the pilgrims who would flock there from all over the world.

#### 12. Psalm 84: 1-10

<sup>1</sup> How lovely is **your dwelling place**, O LORD Almighty!

<sup>2</sup> My soul yearns, even faints, for the courts of the LORD; my heart and my flesh cry out for the living God.

<sup>3</sup> *Even the sparrow has found a home, and the swallow a nest for herself, where she may have her young— a place near your altar, O LORD Almighty, my King and my God.*

<sup>4</sup> *Blessed are those who dwell in **your house**; they **are ever praising you**. Selah*

<sup>5</sup> *Blessed are those whose strength is in you, who have set their hearts on **pilgrimage**.*

<sup>6</sup> *As they pass through the **Valley of Baca**, they make it a place of **springs**; the autumn rains also cover it with pools.*

<sup>7</sup> *They go from strength to strength, till each appears before God in Zion.*

<sup>8</sup> *Hear my prayer, O LORD God Almighty; listen to me, O God of Jacob. Selah*

<sup>9</sup> *Look upon our shield, O God; look with favor on your **Anointed One**.*

<sup>10</sup> *Better is one day in your courts than a thousand elsewhere; I would rather be a doorkeeper in the house of my God than dwell in the tents of the wicked. (Psalm 84: 1-10 )*

These verses of Psalm 84 are clearly about Muslims' main House of Worship in Mecca, the annual pilgrimage of Muslims, as well as the daily worship there. Verse 6 mentions Baca which is an old name of Mecca (Macca in Arabic). Baca is mentioned in the Quran in reference to Mecca. The "Springs" mentioned in verse 6 refers to Zamzam springs in Mecca. Verse 9 mentions Anointed One which means the Chosen One refers to Prophet Mohammad (PBUH). Prophet Mohammad's title is Al-Mustapha which means the Chosen or Anointed.

### 13. Isaiah 28: 10-11

*"For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little: For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to this people." (Isaiah 28: 10-11)*

The Quran was revealed in sections over a span of twenty-three years. It is interesting to compare this with Isaiah 28: 10 which speaks of the same thing, "For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little."

The anticipated prophet according to Isaiah 28: 11 will speak another tongue (another language), not Hebrew like the Jews do. We believe this language is Arabic.

#### 14. Matthew 21: 42-44

*"Jesus said to them, Have you never read in the Scriptures: **The stone the builders rejected** has become the **capstone**; the Lord has done this, and it is marvelous in our eyes? Therefore I tell you that **the kingdom of God will be taken away from you and given to a people who will produce its fruit**. He who falls on this stone will be broken to pieces, but he on whom it falls will be crushed."* (Matthew 21: 42-44)

The 'capstone' (or corner stone) mentioned in the verses cannot be the Prophet Jesus because the verses refer to the crushing victories that the followers of the 'capstone' will win against their enemies. No people were ever broken to pieces or crushed because they resisted Christianity. Christianity was adopted by the Roman Empire only after it agreed to incorporate pagan doctrines common in pagan Mithraic beliefs of the Romans. The Western dominion over the world came after the secular thought's triumph over the medieval Christian view of nature and was realized in the form of a ruthless colonialism.

"The Stone the builders rejected" refers to either Ishmael or Mohammed (PBUH). Ishmael was rejected by Sarah (first wife of his father, Abraham) and Mohammed was initially rejected by his tribe. However, whether the rejected stone is Ishmael or Mohammed doesn't matter because either way, these verses are about transfer of the Kingdom of God to the nation / People of Mohammed and Ishmael.

Furthermore, in a telling Hadith in Sahih Bukhari and Sahih Muslim, the Prophet Mohammed (PUBUH) describes himself as the 'Capstone' completing the building of Prophethood

#### 15. Daniel 9:24-27

Daniel 9:24-27 (King James Version)

<sup>24</sup> **Seventy weeks** are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to **anoint the most Holy**.

<sup>25</sup> Know therefore and understand, that from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem unto the **Messiah the Prince** shall be **seven weeks**, and **threescore and two weeks**: the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublesome times.

<sup>26</sup> And after **threescore and two weeks** shall **Messiah** be cut off, but not for himself: and the **people of the prince** that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof shall be with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined.

<sup>27</sup> And he shall confirm the covenant with many for **one week**: and **in the midst of the week** he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make it desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate.

Daniel 9:24-27 (New International version)

- **"Seventy 'sevens'** are decreed for your people and your holy city to finish transgression, to put an end to sin, to atone for wickedness, to bring in everlasting righteousness, to seal up vision and prophecy and **to anoint the most holy**. Know and understand this: From the issuing of the decree to restore and rebuild Jerusalem until **the Anointed One**, the ruler, comes, there will be **seven 'sevens,'** and **sixty-two 'sevens.'** It will be rebuilt with streets and a trench, but in times of trouble. After the **sixty-two 'sevens,'** the Anointed One will be cut off and will have nothing. The people of the ruler who will come will destroy the city and the sanctuary. The end will come like a flood: War will continue until the end, and desolations have been decreed. He will confirm a covenant with many for **one 'seven'**. In the **middle of the 'seven'** he will put an end to sacrifice and offering. And on a wing of the temple he will set up an abomination that causes desolation, until the end that is decreed is poured out on him."

Our interpretation of this prophecy is as follows:

#### **Verse 24: Year of birth of Prophet Mohammad**

We have discovered that the first part of Daniel's prophecy (verse 24), the year of birth of Prophet Mohammad (PBUH)

The desolation of the Jews due to Jews-Roman war lasted from 66 AD until 73 AD. Each "week" (also translated as "seven") may refer to either a period of 7 years or alternatively as one year. In this verse, we believe a "week" refers to 7 years. Based on this prophecy, we can calculate the date of birth of the "Anointed One" or "the Most Holy" as follows:  $73 + (70 \times 7) + 7 = 570$  AD which is the year of birth of Prophet Mohammad.

Furthermore, verse 24 says "to seal up the vision and prophecy". This is clear reference to Prophet Mohammad (PBUH) who has been designated in the Quran as the Seal of the Prophets, meaning he is the final prophet and he seals prophecy.

Note that the Anointed One means the Chosen One. One of Prophet Mohammad's titles is Al-Mustapha which means the Chosen One.

**Verses 25-27:**

These verses refer to Prophet Mohammad's time and conquest of Jerusalem by Muslims as well as to the second time when Muslims will conquer Israel and enter Jerusalem again.

**The First Conquest of Jerusalem**

Verse 25 tells that the Anointed One will come after 62 sevens (or weeks) from the decree to re-build Jerusalem. The 62 sevens can be calculated as follows:  $(62 + 7) \times 7 = 69 \times 7 = 483$  years. Emperor Hadrian made a proclamation to rebuild Jerusalem in 130 AD. Therefore, the Anointed One will come in:  $483 \text{ years} + 130 \text{ AD} = 613 \text{ AD}$  which is the year in which Prophet Mohammad started preaching the message of Islam publicly. He started receiving the revelations of the Quran in 610 AD, but he only was able to preach it secretly for the first 3 years.

Verse 26 says that after 62 weeks (here we will interpret "weeks" as years), he will be cut-off, meaning he will die. Indeed, Prophet Mohammad died at age 62.

Verse 27 says: "In the middle of the seven (or week)". This means after about 3.5 years. Omar bin Al-Khattab, the second Caliph (successor in leadership of Muslims) conquered Jerusalem about 3.5 years after the death of Prophet Mohammad. He signed a treaty to protect the residents of Jerusalem and honored it.

Note that verse 26 says "people of the prince". Omar bin Al-Khattab's title was Prince of the Believers.

**16. Isaiah 11: 1-2**

*"And **there shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse, and a Branch shall grow out of his roots: And the spirit of the LORD shall rest upon him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD.**" (Isaiah 11: 1-2)*

In Hebrew, the word Ishmael is written as Yishma e'l. It is pronounced (yish-maw-ale'). Similarly, the word Jesse is written as Yishay. It is pronounced (yee-shah'-ee), or in Aramaic it is 'iyshay and pronounced (ee-shah'-ee).

Thus, we begin to see, even in our phonetic Hebrew rendition, how these Christian Biblical scholars came to recognize that just as "Dick" is a contraction of "Richard," and "Bob" is a contraction of "Robert" similarly, by studying the Hebrew words themselves, they found that (yee-shah'-ee) is indeed a contraction of (yish-maw-ale').

Isn't it amazing that we have been told this not by Muslims, but by Christian scholars?

Encyclopedia Biblica, Rev. T. K. Cheyne D.Litt D.D., J Sutherland Black, .A. LL.D., Vol.3, under "Names," p.3292, item 52

These verses declare that the awaited prophet shall be a descendent of Ishmael. Prophet Mohammad (PBUH) is a descendant of Ishmael.

### 17. Genesis 49: 10

*"The scepter shall not depart from **Judah**, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until **Shiloh** come; and unto him shall the gathering of the people be."* (Genesis 49: 10)

This passage clearly asserts that God will take away from Judah and Jerusalem the Judge and the Prophet. Hence, if he (the Prophet) is to come, he must be from outside Jerusalem and not from the tribe of Judah. We know that Prophet Muhammad is from descendants of Ishmael and he was born in Mecca.

Another explicit validation that foreshadows the coming of Prophet Muhammad is found in Genesis 49:10. It states, *"The scepter shall not depart from Judah, nor the rulers staff from between his feet, until Shiloh comes, and to him shall be the obedience of the peoples."*

Although the verse is very clear, let us provide some perspective. Before his death, Jacob gathered his twelve sons and told them what each one would face in the coming days. In this verse, Jacob addresses Judah who is the lawgiver which is confirmed in the statement *"and Judah is my scepter or lawgiver"* (Psalms 60:7). As such, in Genesis 49:10, Jacob informs Judah that in the future the scepter will pass from him to Shiloh. The question is: who is Shiloh?

Christians believe that Shiloh refers to Jesus Christ. However, this verse cannot be in reference to Christ because the scepter was to depart from Judah and go to Shiloh. Jesus is a direct descendant of Judah (Matthew 1), and therefore he cannot be Shiloh. In other words, Shiloh will possess the scepter and will be the lawgiver, and he will not be from Judah. Additionally, the notion that Jesus Christ was Shiloh and the lawgiver can be refuted when we consider that according to Christian doctrine Jesus did not produce any new law and nor did he claim to be the lawgiver. If we believe the testimony of both Apostles Peter and Paul, they were inspired to revoke the erstwhile Jewish law and taught that Christians no longer needed to abide by such doctrines. However, 49:10 makes complete sense when we consider Prophet Muhammad as Shiloh since he brought forth a new law in the Quran. This is consistent with Isaiah 3:1-2,



whereby God will remove from Judah the judge and the prophet. Here, the judge and the prophet refer to the scepter or lawgiver.

### 18. Malachi Chapter 3: verse 1

*"See, I will send my messenger, who will prepare the way before me. Then suddenly the Lord (Adonai) you are seeking will come to his temple; the messenger of the covenant, whom you desire, will come," says the LORD Almighty." (Malachi 3: 1)*

The lord (Adonai) in this verse fits perfectly Prophet Mohammad (PBUH) who made a sudden and miraculous overnight, heavenly, journey from Ka'ba in Mecca to the site of Temple of Solomon in Jerusalem. For further explanation of this verse, please read [Chapter 2 of Bishop Kildani's book "Articles on Muhammad in the Bible"](#)

### 19. Mark 1: 7-8

*John the Baptist says "After me will come one more powerful than I, the thongs of whose sandals I am not worthy to stoop down and untie. I baptize you with water, but he will baptize you with the Holy Spirit." Mark 1: 7-8*

In these verses (Mark 1: 7-8), prophet John the Baptist (PBUH) is prophesying about another prophet who will come later, after John the Baptist dies, so this other prophet cannot be Jesus (PBUH) because John the Baptist was a contemporary of Jesus, meaning they lived during the period.

### 20. Revelation 19: 11-15

<sup>11</sup> *I saw heaven standing open and there before me was a **white horse**, whose **rider is called Faithful and True**. With justice he judges and makes war.*

<sup>12</sup> *His eyes are like blazing fire, and on his head are many crowns. **He has a name written on him** that no one knows but he himself.*

<sup>13</sup> *He is dressed in a robe dipped in blood, and his name is the Word of God.*

<sup>14</sup> *The armies of heaven were following him, riding on white horses and dressed in fine linen, white and clean.*

<sup>15</sup> *Out of his mouth comes a sharp sword with which to strike down the nations. "He will rule them with an iron scepter." (Revelation 19: 11-15)*

The rider on the white horse is most likely Prophet Mohammad. Verse 11 is saying that he is called Faithful and True. It is well known Prophet Mohammad (PBUH) was known as, even before he became a prophet, Al-Sadiq Al-Ameen which can be translated as "The Honest and Faithful". After he became a prophet, he indeed acted as a judge and he led the Muslims in the fights against the enemies. Verse 12 says "He has a name written on him", Prophet Mohammad had a seal of mentioning his as Messenger of God inscribed underneath his skin, this natural seal was a sign of that he is a prophet & Messenger from God. Verse 14 describes faithful Muslims (who are destined to Paradise/Heaven) who wear white linen outfit. Furthermore, the Quran (in Tauba verse 26 and Al-Omran verse 124) says that Muslims in the fights have been supported by angels.

### 21. 1st Corinthians 13: 9-10

<sup>9</sup>*For we know in part, and we prophesy in part.*

<sup>10</sup>*But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away.*

**(1 Corinthians 13: 9-10 )**

These verses admit that what was known was only a part or a portion of the complete knowledge about God's religion. "When that which is perfect comes" is reference to the Quran & the message of Prophet Mohammad which completed the transmission of everything God wants humans to know and follow, in a perfect, preserved, and complete form. Thus, the verse goes on to say, "*Then that which is in part shall be done away*" meaning previous scriptures such as the Gospel & Torah will no longer be needed after Prophet Mohammad.

### 22. Genesis 21

<sup>11</sup> *The matter distressed **Abraham** greatly because it concerned his son.*

<sup>12</sup> *But God said to him, "Do not be so distressed about the boy and your maidservant. Listen to whatever Sarah tells you, because it is through Isaac that your offspring <sup>[b]</sup> will be reckoned.*

<sup>13</sup> *I will make the **son of the maidservant** into a nation also, because he is your offspring."*

<sup>17</sup> *God heard the boy crying, and the angel of God called to **Hagar** from heaven and said to her, "What is the matter, Hagar? Do not be afraid; God has heard the boy crying as he lies there. <sup>18</sup> Lift the boy up and take him by the hand, for **I will make him into a great nation.**"*

<sup>19</sup> *Then God opened her eyes and she saw a well of water. So she went and filled the skin with water and gave the boy a drink.*

<sup>20</sup> *God was with the boy as he grew up. He lived in the desert and became an archer. <sup>21</sup> While he was living in the Desert of Paran, his mother got a wife for him from Egypt.*

Verse 13 in Genesis 21 indicates clearly that God recognized Ishmael as a son of Abraham, even though his mother, Hagar, is a maidservant, according to the Bible. Furthermore, verse 18, shows that God was really interested in protecting Ishmael and telling Hagar that he will become a great nation. The Arabs are the descendants of Ishmael. These verses indicate the God has blessed the Arabs. The Arabs never became a Great Nation until Prophet Mohammad brought the message of Islam to them. Thus, Islam is the fulfillment of God's blessing of the Arabs and God's promise that he will the descendants of Ishmael (the Arabs) a great nation. Furthermore, Prophet Mohammad has emphasized that Muslims are an Umma which means a Nation, despite the fact the Islam is a religion and people from different countries may join it.

### 23. Genesis 17: 20

<sup>20</sup> *And as for Ishmael, I have heard you: **I will surely bless him; I will make him fruitful and will greatly increase his numbers. He will be the father of twelve rulers, and I will make him into a great nation.** (Genesis 17: 20)*

This verse also shows that God blessed Ishmael (the father of the Arabs) and promised to make him a great Nation.

### 24. Genesis 17: 5-8

<sup>5</sup> *No longer will you be called Abram ; your name will be **Abraham**, for I have made you a father of many nations.*

<sup>6</sup> *I will make you very fruitful; I will make nations of you, and kings will come from you.*

<sup>7</sup> *I will **establish my covenant** as an everlasting covenant **between me and you and your descendants** after you for the generations to come, to be your God and the God of your descendants after you.*

<sup>8</sup> *The whole land of Canaan, where you are now an alien, I will give as an everlasting possession to you and your descendants after you; and I will be their God." (Genesis 17: 5-8)*

These verses are a clear indication that God's covenant was with Abraham and all his descendants, which means including his son Ishmael (the father of the Arabs).

## Prophet Mohammad Passes Two Tests of True Prophets

### 1. The test of true prophets prescribed by Moses

*"But the prophet, which shall presume to speak a word in my name, which I have not commanded him to speak, or that shall speak in the name of other gods, even that prophet shall die." (Deuteronomy 18: 20)*

### 2. The test of true prophets prescribed by Jesus

*"Beloved, believe not every spirit (prophet), but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world. Hereby know ye the **Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God:** And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that [spirit] of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world." (1 John 4:1-3)*

This one is very easy to understand: Every prophet who does not confess that Jesus (PBUH) came in the flesh was not sent by God. He is a false prophet. But any prophet that confesses that Jesus (pbuh) came in the flesh **was sent by God**. What does the Qur'an and Muhammad (pbuh) say about Jesus (pbuh)? They say that *a Muslim is not a Muslim* if he does not believe in Jesus (pbuh), in his miraculous birth, in his giving life to the dead by God's permission, in his healing of the lepers and the blind by God's permission, in his piety and chastity, in his truthfulness, and in the fact that he was the Messiah (the Christ). The Qur'an is practically overflowing with verses to this effect. For example, in A'al-Umran(3):40 we read: **"And the angels said 'O Mary, Allah gives you glad tidings of a Word from Him, his name is Messiah, Jesus son of Mary, High honored in thisworld and the next, of those near stationed to Allah."** So now we must ask: Has Muhammad (pbuh) fulfilled this criteria or not? Also, please read the eighth point in chapter 6.13.

No other religion in the whole world outside Christianity makes it *an article of faith* for its adherents to believe in, love and honor Jesus except Islam. Reading the Qur'an bears testimony to that (see for example (19):16-36, Al-Imran (3):33-68, Al-Nissa (5): 72-77).

We have the *testimony of Jesus himself in the Bible* that Muhammad was a prophet of God. If Jesus' words carry any weight at all with us then we must concede that Muhammad was a prophet of God and therefore spoke in the name of God. So what did Muhammad (pbuh) say? He said that God sent him to return mankind to the true religion of Jesus (pbuh) which mankind had corrupted after Jesus' departure.

### Three (3) prophecies mention Prophet Mohammad's name

#### 1. Song of Solomon 5: 16

*"His mouth is most sweet: yea, he is **Altogether Lovely**. This is my beloved and this is my friend, O daughters of Jerusalem."* (Song of Solomon 5:16)

In the Hebrew version of the Bible, a variation of Prophet Mohammad's name appears instead of "Altogether Lovely".

#### 2. Haggai 2: 7-9

*"I will shake all nations, and the **desired (Himdah)** of all nations will come, and I will fill this house with glory,' says the LORD Almighty. 8 'The silver is mine and the gold is mine,' declares the LORD Almighty. 9 'The glory of this present house will be greater than the glory of the former house,' says the LORD Almighty. 'And in this place I will grant **peace (Shalom)**,' declares the LORD Almighty."* (Haggai 2: 7-9)

"The desired " is Himdah in Hebrew which refers to Mohammad. For further explanation of these verses, please read [Chapter 2 of Bishop Kildani's book "Articles on Muhammad in the Bible"](#)

#### 3. John 16: 7-13

The Comforter - the Spirit of Truth - (some Bibles refer to this person as "The Helper") spoken about by Prophet Jesus in John Chapter 16 was no other than Prophet Muhammad. It cannot be taken as the Holy Ghost as many Christian theologians erroneously claim.

*"It is expedient for you that I go away," says Jesus, "for if I go not away the Comforter will not come unto you, but if I depart I will send him unto you."* (John 16: 7)

*"I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now."* (John 16: 12)

*"Howbeit **when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth:** for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come."* (John 16: 13)

The words clearly show that **the Comforter** had to come after the departure of Jesus, and was not with Jesus when he uttered these words. Are we to presume that Jesus was devoid of the Holy Ghost if the coming of the Comforter was conditional on the going of Jesus? However Luke 3:22 tells us that the Holy Spirit descended on Jesus in a bodily form like a dove proving that The Holy Spirit was already present before Jesus was gone.

(Luk 3:22) And the Holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon him (Jesus), and a voice came from heaven, which said, Thou art my beloved Son; in thee I am well pleased.

Therefore, the actual prophecy is for someone who wasn't present during the time of Jesus and it is Prophet Mohammed (PBUH). Besides, the way in which Jesus describes him indicates that the Comforter is a human being, not a ghost:

*"He shall not speak of himself, but whatsoever he shall hear that he shall speak."* (John 16: 13)

Should we presume that the Holy Ghost and God are two distinct entities and that the Holy Ghost "speaks" of himself and also what he "hears" from God? The words of Jesus clearly refer to some messenger from God. Jesus calls him the Spirit of Truth, and so does the Quran speak of Prophet Muhammad, "No, indeed, he has brought the truth, and confirmed the Messengers." (Quran 37: 37)

"He shall **hear** that he shall speak" perfectly fits the way Quran was revealed to Prophet Mohammad. Angel Gabriel said the verses and Prophet Mohammad heard them and recited them. Unlike the Bible, the Quran does not contain Prophet Mohammad. The Quran strictly is God's message to people. It is clear to whoever reads the Quran that it is God addressing people through the verses of the Quran.

Jesus in John 16: 13 is in his way confirming what Moses prophesied in Deuteronomy 18: 18 "I will put my words in his mouth".

## CHAPTER THREE

### The Scientific Miracles of the Qur'an

Fourteen centuries ago, God sent down the Qur'an to mankind as a book of guidance. He called upon people to be guided to the truth by adhering to this book. From the day of its revelation to the day of judgment, this last divine book will remain the sole guide for humanity.

The matchless style of the Qur'an and the superior wisdom in it are definite evidence that it is the word of God. In addition, the Qur'an has many miraculous attributes proving that it is a revelation from God. One of these attributes is the fact that a number of scientific truths that we have only been able to uncover by the technology of the 20th century were stated in the Qur'an 1,400 years ago.

Of course the Qur'an is not a book of science. However, many scientific facts that are expressed in an extremely concise and profound manner in its verses have only been discovered with the technology of the 20th century. These facts could not have been known at the time of the Qur'an's revelation, and this is still more proof that the Qur'an is the word of God.

In order to understand the scientific miracle of the Qur'an, we must first take a look at the level of science at the time when this holy book was revealed.

In the 7th century, when the Qur'an was revealed, Arab society had many superstitious and groundless beliefs where scientific issues were concerned. Lacking the technology to examine the universe and nature, these early Arabs believed in legends inherited from past generations. They supposed, for example, that mountains supported the sky above. They believed that the earth was flat and that there were high mountains at its both ends. It was thought that these mountains were pillars that kept the vault of heaven high above.

However all these superstitious beliefs of Arab society were eliminated with the Qur'an. In Sura Sad, verse 2, it was said: "God is He who raised up the heavens without any support..." (The Qur'an, 38:2). This verse invalidated the belief that the sky remains above because of the mountains. In many other subjects, important facts were revealed at a time when no one could have known them. The Qur'an, which was revealed at a time when people knew very little about astronomy, physics, or biology, contains key facts on a variety of subjects such as the creation of the universe, the creation of the human being, the structure of the atmosphere, and the delicate balances that make life on earth possible.

Now, let us look at some of these scientific miracles revealed in the Qur'an together.

## 1. The Coming Of The Universe Into Existence

The origin of the universe is described in the Qur'an in the following verse:

**"He is the Originator of the heavens and the earth."**(The Qur'an, 6:101)

This information given in the Qur'an is in full agreement with the findings of contemporary science.

The conclusion that astrophysics has reached today is that the entire universe, together with the dimensions of matter and time, came into existence as a result of a great explosion that occurred in no time. This event, known as "The Big Bang" proved that the universe was created from nothingness as the result of the explosion of a single point.

Before the Big Bang, there was no such thing as matter. From a condition of **non-existence** in which neither matter, nor energy, nor even time existed, and which can only be described metaphysically, matter, energy, and time were all created. This fact, only recently discovered by modern physics, was announced to us in the Qur'an 1,400 years ago.

## 2. The Expansion of the Universe

In the Qur'an, which was revealed 14 centuries ago at a time when the science of astronomy was still primitive, the expansion of the universe was described like this:

**"And it is We who have constructed the heaven with might, and verily, it is We who are steadily expanding it."  
(The Qur'an, 51:47)**

The word "heaven", as stated in this verse, is used in various places in the Qur'an with the meaning of space and universe. Here again, the word is used with this meaning. In other words, in the Qur'an it is revealed that the universe "expands". And this is the very conclusion that science has reached today.

This fact was proved in 1929 by the American Astronomer, Edwin Hubble.

Until the dawn of the 20th century, the only view prevailing in the world of science was that "the universe has a constant nature and it has existed since infinite time"

## 3. The Splitting Asunder of "The Heavens and The Earth"

Another verse about the creation of the heavens is as follows:

"Do not the Unbelievers see that the heavens and the earth were joined together (as one unit of creation), before We clove them asunder, and We made from water every living thing. Will they not then believe?" (The Qur'an, 21:30)



The word *ratq* translated as "**sewn to**" means "mixed in each, blended" in Arabic dictionaries. It is used to refer to two different substances that make up a whole. The phrase "**we unstitched**" is the verb *fataqa* in Arabic and implies that something comes into being by tearing apart or destroying the structure of *ratq*. The sprouting of a seed from the soil is one of the actions to which this verb is applied.

Let us take a look at the verse again with this knowledge in mind. In the verse, sky and earth are at first subject to the status of *ratq*. They are separated (*fataqa*) with one coming out of the other. Intriguingly, when we remember the first moments of the Big Bang, we see that a single point included all the matter in the universe. In other words, everything, including "the heavens and earth" which were not created yet, were included in this point in a condition of *ratq*. This point exploded violently, causing its matter to *fataqa* and in the process created the structure of the whole universe.

When we compare the expressions in the verse with scientific findings, we see that they are in perfect agreement with each other. Interestingly enough, these findings were not arrived at until the 20th century.

#### 4. Orbits

While referring to the Sun and the Moon in the Qur'an, it is emphasized that each moves in a definite orbit.

"It is He Who created the night and the day, and the sun and the moon. They swim along, each in an orbit. "(The Qur'an, 21:33)

It is mentioned in another verse, too, that the Sun is not static but moves in a definite orbit:

"And the sun runs to its resting place. That is the decree of the Almighty, the All-Knowing. "(The Qur'an, 37:38)

These facts communicated in the Qur'an have been discovered by astronomical observations in our age. According to the calculations of experts on astronomy, the Sun is traveling at the enormous speed of 720,000 kilometers an hour in the direction of the star Vega in a particular orbit called the Solar Apex. This means that the sun travels roughly 17,280,000 kilometers a day. Along with the Sun, and all planets and satellites within the gravitational system of the Sun also travel the same distance. In addition, all the stars in the universe are in a similar planned motion.

That the entire universe is full of paths and orbits such as this one, is written in the Qur'an as follows: "By the sky full of paths and orbits." (The Qur'an, 51:7)

There are about 200 billion galaxies in the universe, consisting of nearly 200 billion stars in each. Most of these stars have planets, and most of those planets have satellites. All of these heavenly bodies move in very precisely computed orbits. For millions of years, each has been "swimming" along in its own orbit in perfect harmony and order with all the others. Moreover, many comets also move along in the orbits determined for them.

During these movements, none of these celestial bodies cuts across another's path, or collides with another.

Surely at the time the Qur'an was revealed, mankind did not possess today's telescopes or advanced observation technologies to observe millions of kilometers of space, nor the modern knowledge of physics or astronomy. Therefore, at that time, it was not possible to determine scientifically that space is "full of paths and orbits" as stated in the verse. However, this was openly declared to us in the Qur'an that was revealed at that time:-because the Qur'an is the word of God.

## 5. The Protected Roof

In the Qur'an, God calls our attention to a very interesting attribute of the sky:

"We made the sky a preserved and protected roof yet still they turn away from Our Signs.." (The Qur'an, 21:32)

This attribute of the sky has been proved by scientific research carried out in the 20th century.

The atmosphere surrounding the earth serves crucial functions for the continuity of life. While destroying many meteors big and small as they approach the earth, it prevents them from falling to earth and harming living things.

In addition, the atmosphere filters the light rays coming from space that are harmful to living things. Interestingly, the atmosphere lets only harmless and useful rays- visible light, near ultraviolet light, and radio waves pass through. All of this radiation is vital for life. . Near ultraviolet rays, which are only partially let in by the atmosphere, are very important for the photosynthesis of plants and for the survival of all living beings. The majority of the intense ultraviolet rays emitted from the sun are filtered out by the ozone layer of the atmosphere and only a limited-and essential-part of the ultraviolet spectrum reaches the Earth.

The protective function of the atmosphere does not end here. The atmosphere also protects the earth from the freezing cold of the space, which is about minus 270° C.

## 6. The Returning Sky

The verse 11 of Sura Tarik in the Qur'an, refers to the "returning" function of the sky.

"By Heaven with its cyclical systems." (The Qur'an, 86:11)

This word interpreted as "cyclical" in Qur'an translations also has meanings of "sending back" or "returning".

As known, the atmosphere surrounding the Earth consists of many layers. Each layer serves an important purpose for the benefit of life. Research has revealed that these layers have the function of turning the materials or rays they are exposed to back into space or back down to the Earth. Now let us examine with a few examples of this "recycling" function of the layers encircling the Earth.

The troposphere, 13 to 15 kilometers above the Earth, enables water vapor rising from the surface of the Earth to be condensed and **turn back** as rain.

The ozone layer, at an altitude of 25 kilometers, reflects harmful radiation and ultraviolet light coming from space and **turns both back** into space.

The ionosphere, **reflects** radio waves broadcast from the Earth **back** down to different parts of the world, just like a passive communications satellite, and thus makes wireless communication, radio, and television broadcasting possible over long distances.

The magnetosphere layer **turns** the harmful radioactive particles emitted by the Sun and other stars **back** into space before they reach the Earth.

The fact that this property of the atmosphere's layers, that was only demonstrated in the recent past was announced centuries ago in the Qur'an, once again demonstrates that the Qur'an is the word of God.

## 7. The Layers of the Atmosphere

One fact about the universe revealed in the verses of the Qur'an is that the sky is made up of seven layers.

"It is He Who created everything on the earth for you and then directed His attention up to heaven and arranged it into seven regular heavens. He has knowledge of all things."  
(The Qur'an, 2:29)

"Then He turned to heaven when it was smoke. In two days He determined them as seven heavens and revealed, in every heaven, its own mandate." (The Qur'an, 41:12)

The word "heavens", which appears in many verses in the Qur'an, is used to refer to the sky above the Earth, as well as the entire universe. Given this meaning of the word, it is seen that the Earth's sky, or the atmosphere, is made up of seven layers.

The Earth has all the attributes that are needed for life. One of them is the atmosphere, which serves as a shield protecting living things. Today, it is an established fact that the atmosphere is made up of different layers lying on top of one another. Just as it is described in the Qur'an, the atmosphere is made up of exactly seven layers. This is certainly one of the miracles of the Qur'an.

The layer of the atmosphere closest to Earth is called the **TROPOSPHERE**. It contains about 90% of the total mass of the atmosphere. The layer above the troposphere is called the **STRATOSPHERE**. The **OZONE LAYER** is the part of the stratosphere where absorption of ultraviolet rays occurs. The layer above the stratosphere is called the **MESOSPHERE**. The **THERMOSPHERE** lies above the mesosphere. The ionized gases form a layer within the thermosphere called the **IONOSPHERE**. The outermost part of Earth's atmosphere extends from about 480 km out to 960 km. This part is called the **EXOSPHERE**. (2)

If we count the number of layers cited in this source, we see that the atmosphere consists of exactly seven layers, just as stated in the verse.

1. Troposphere
2. Stratosphere
3. Ozonosphere
4. Mesosphere
5. Thermosphere
6. Ionosphere
7. Exosphere

Another important miracle on this subject is mentioned in the statement "**(He) revealed, in every heaven, its own mandate.**", in verse 12 of Sura Fussilet. In other words, in the verse, God states that He assigned each heaven its own duty. Truly, as seen in previous chapters, each one of these layers has vital duties for the benefit of human kind and all other living things on the Earth. Each layer has a particular function, ranging from forming rain to preventing harmful rays, from reflecting radio waves, to averting the harmful effects of meteors.

## 8. The Function of Mountains

The Qur'an draws attention to a very important geological function of mountains.

"We placed firmly embedded mountains on the earth, so it would not move under them..."  
(The Qur'an, 21:31)

According to these findings, mountains emerge as a result of the movements and collisions of massive plates forming the Earth's crust. When two plates collide, the stronger one slides under the other, the one on the top bends and forms heights and mountains. The layer beneath proceeds under the ground and makes a deep extension downward. That means that mountains have a portion stretching downwards, as large as their visible parts on the Earth.

In a verse, this role of the mountains is pointed out by a comparison with "pegs":

"Have we not made the earth as a bed and the mountains its pegs?" (The Qur'an, 78:6-7)

Mountains, in other words, clench the plates in the Earth's crust together by extending above and beneath the Earth's surface at the conjunction points of these plates. In this way, they fix the Earth's crust, and prevent it from drifting over the magma stratum or among its plates. Briefly, we may liken mountains to nails that keep pieces of wood together.

This fixing function of the mountains is described in scientific literature by the term "isostasy". Isostasy means the following:

Isostasy: general equilibrium in the Earth's crust maintained by a yielding flow of rock material beneath the surface under gravitational stress.<sup>(5)</sup>

This vital role of mountains, that was discovered by modern geology and seismic research, was revealed in the Qur'an centuries ago as an example of the supreme wisdom in God's creation.

"We placed firmly embedded mountains on the earth, so it would not move under them..." (The Qur'an, 21:31)

## 9. The Movement of Mountains

In one verse, we are informed that mountains are not motionless as they seem, but are in constant motion.

"You will see the mountains you reckoned to be solid going past like clouds." (The Qur'an, 27:88)

This motion of the mountains is caused by the movement of the Earth's crust that they are located on. The Earth's crust 'floats' over the mantle layer, which is denser. It was at the beginning of the 20th century when, for the first time in history, a German scientist by the name of Alfred Wegener proposed that the continents of the earth had been attached together when it first formed, but then drifted in different directions, and thus separated as they moved away from each other.

Geologists understood that that Wegener was right only in the 1980s, 50 years after his death. As Wegener pointed out in an article published in 1915, the land masses on the earth were joined together about 500 million years ago. As Wegener pointed out in a 1915 article, the land masses of the earth were joined together some 500 million years ago, and this large mass, called *Pangaea*, was located in the South Pole.

Approximately 180 million years ago, *Pangaea* divided into two parts, which drifted in different directions. One of these giant continents was *Gondwana*, which included Africa, Australia, Antarctica and India. The second one was *Laurasia*, which included Europe, North America and Asia, except for India. Over the next 150 million years following this separation, *Gondwana* and *Laurasia* divided into smaller parts.

These continents that emerged after the split of *Pangaea* have been constantly moving on the Earth's surface at several centimeters per year, in the meantime changing the sea and land ratios of the Earth.

Discovered as a result of the geological research carried out at the beginning of the 20th century, this movement of the Earth's crust is explained by scientists as follows:

The crust and the uppermost part of the mantle, with a thickness of about 100 kms., are divided into segments called plates. There are six major plates, and several small ones. According to the theory called plate tectonics, these plates move about on Earth, carrying continents and ocean floor with them. Continental motion has been measured at from 1-5 cm per year. As the plates continue to move about, this will produce a slow change in Earth's geography. Each year, for instance, the Atlantic Ocean becomes slightly wider.

There is a very important point to be stated here: God has referred to the motion of mountains as a drifting action in the verse. Today, modern scientists also use the term "**Continental Drift**" for this motion.

Unquestionably, it is one of the miracles of the Qur'an that this scientific fact, which has recently been discovered by science, was announced in the Qur'an.

## 10. The Miracle in the Iron

Iron is one of the elements highlighted in the Qur'an. In Sura Hadid, meaning Iron, we are informed:

"...And we sent down iron in which there lies great force and which has many uses for mankind...." (The Qur'an, 57:25)

The word "sent down," particularly used for iron in the verse, could be thought of having a metaphorical meaning to explain that iron has been given to benefit people. But when we take into consideration the literal meaning of the word, which is, "being physically sent down from the sky", we realize that this verse implies a very significant scientific miracle.

This is because modern astronomical findings have disclosed that the iron found in our world has come from the giant stars in outer space.

The heavy metals in the universe are produced in the nuclei of big stars. Our solar system, however, does not possess a suitable structure for producing iron on its own. Iron can only be produced in much bigger stars than the Sun, where the temperature reaches a few hundred million degrees. When the amount of iron exceeds a certain level in a star, the star can no longer accommodate it, and eventually it explodes in what is called a "nova" or a "supernova". As a result of this explosion, meteors containing iron are scattered around the universe, and they move through the void until attracted by the gravitational force of a celestial body.

All this shows that iron did not form on the Earth, but was carried from exploding stars in space via meteors, and was "**sent down to earth**", in exactly the same way as stated in the verse: It is clear that this fact could not have been scientifically known in the 7th century, when the Qur'an was revealed.

## 11. The Pairs in Creation

Glory be to Him Who created all the pairs: from what the earth produces and from themselves and from things unknown to them."  
(The Qur'an, 37:36)

Although the concept of "pair" or "couple" commonly stands for male and female, the statement of "from things unknown to them" has wider implications. Today, one of the implications of the verse has been revealed. The British scientist Paul Dirac, who proposed that matter is created in pairs, was awarded the Nobel Prize for physics in 1933. This discovery, called "parité", maintains that matter is paired with its opposite: anti-matter. Anti-matter carries the opposite properties to matter. For instance, as opposed to matter, the electron of anti-matter is positively charged and its protons are negatively charged. This fact is stated in a scientific source in this way:

"...every particle has its antiparticle of opposite charge... ..and the uncertainty relation tells us that pair creation and pair annihilation happen in the vacuum at all times, in all places."

## 12. The Relativity of Time

Today, the relativity of time is a proven scientific fact. This was revealed by Einstein's theory of relativity at the early years of the 20th century. Until then, people did not know that time was a

relative concept, and that it could change according to the environment. Yet, the great scientist Albert Einstein openly proved this fact with the theory of relativity. He showed that time is dependent on mass and velocity. In the history of humanity, no one had expressed this fact clearly before.

With one exception though; the Qur'an included information about time's being relative! Some verses about the subject read:

**"They ask you to hasten the punishment. God will not break His promise. A day with your Lord is equivalent to a thousand years in the way you count."  
(The Qur'an, 22:47)**

**"He directs the whole affair from heaven to earth. Then it will again ascend to Him on a Day whose length is a thousand years by the way you measure."  
(The Qur'an, 32:5)**

**"The angels and the Spirit ascend to Him in a day whose length is fifty thousand years."  
(The Qur'an, 70:4)**

In some verses, it is indicated that people perceive time differently and that sometimes people can perceive a very short period of time as a very lengthy one. The following conversation of people held during their judgement in the Hereafter is a good example of this:

"He will say, 'How many years did you tarry on the earth?' They will say, 'We tarried there for a day or part of a day. Ask those able to count!' He will say, 'You only tarried there for a little while if you did but know!'" (The Qur'an, 23:12)

The fact that the relativity of time is so clearly mentioned in the Qur'an, which started to be revealed in 610, is another evidence that it is a holy book.

### **13. The Proportion of Rain**

One of the items of information given in the Qur'an about rain is that it is sent down to Earth in due measure. This is mentioned in Sura Zukhruf as follows;

**"It is He who sends down water in due measure from the sky by which We bring a dead land back to life. That is how you too will be raised (from the dead)."  
(The Qur'an, 43:11)**

This measured quantity in rain has again been discovered by modern research. It is estimated that in one second, approximately 16 million tons of water evaporates from the Earth. This figure amounts to 513 trillion tons of water in one year. This number is equal to the amount of



rain that falls on the Earth in a year. This means that water continuously circulates in a balanced cycle, in a "measure". Life on Earth depends on this water cycle. Even if people used all the available technology in the world, they would not be able to reproduce this cycle artificially

Even a minor deviation in this equilibrium would very soon give rise to a major ecological imbalance that would bring about the end of life on Earth. Yet, this never happens, and rain keeps falling every year in exactly the same quantity just as revealed in the Qur'an.

#### 14. The Formation of Rain

How rain forms remained a great mystery for a long time. Only after weather radar was invented was it possible to discover the stages by which rain is formed.

According to this, the formation of rain takes place in three stages. First, the "raw material" of rain rises up into the air with the wind. Later, clouds are formed, and finally raindrops appear.

The Qur'an's account of the formation of rain refers exactly to this process. In one verse, this formation is described in this way:

"It is God Who sends the winds which stir up clouds which He spreads about the sky however He wills. He forms them into dark clumps and you see the rain come pouring out from the middle of them. When He makes it fall on those of His slaves He wills, they rejoice"  
(The Qur'an, 30:48)

Now, let us examine these three stages outlined in the verse more technically.

**FIRST STAGE:** "It is God Who sends the winds..."

Countless air bubbles formed by the foaming of the oceans continuously burst and cause water particles to be ejected towards the sky. These particles, which are rich in salt, are then carried away by winds and rise upward in the atmosphere. These particles, which are called aerosols, function as water traps, and form cloud drops by collecting around the water vapour themselves, which rises from the seas as tiny droplets.

**SECOND STAGE:** "... which stir up clouds which He spreads about the sky however He wills. He forms them into dark clumps..."

The clouds are formed from water vapour that condenses around the salt crystals or dust particles in the air. Because the water droplets in these clouds are very small (with a diameter between 0.01 and 0.02 mm), the clouds are suspended in the air, and spread across the sky. Thus, the sky is covered in clouds.

**THIRD STAGE:** "...and you see the rain come pouring out from the middle of them"

The water particles that surround salt crystals and dust particles thicken and form raindrops, so, drops that become heavier than the air leave the clouds and start to fall to the ground as rain.

As we have seen, every stage in the formation of rain is related in the verses of the Qur'an. Furthermore, these stages are explained in exactly the right sequence. Just as with many other natural phenomena on the Earth, God gives the most correct explanation of this phenomenon as well, and made it known to people in the Qur'an centuries before it was discovered.

### **15. The Seas not Mingling with One Another**

One of the properties of seas that has only recently been discovered is related in a verse of the Qur'an as follows:

"He has let loose the two seas, converging together, with a barrier between them they do not break through."

(The Qur'an, 55:19-20)

This property of the seas, that they come together yet do not mingle with one another at all, has only very recently been discovered by oceanographers. Because of the physical force called "surface tension", the waters of neighboring seas do not mix. Caused by the difference in the density of their waters, surface tension prevents them from mingling with one another, just as if a thin wall were between them.

The interesting side to this is that during a period when people had no knowledge of physics, surface tension, or oceanography; this was revealed in the Qur'an.

### **16. Darkness in the Seas and Internal Waves**

"Or (the unbelievers' state) are like the darkness of a fathomless sea which is covered by waves above which are waves above which are clouds, layers of darkness, one upon the other. If he puts out his hand, he can scarcely see it. Those God gives no light to, they have no light."

(The Qur'an, 24:40)

The general environment in deep seas is described in the book named Oceans:

The darkness in deep seas and oceans is found around a depth of 200 meters and below. At this depth, there is almost no light. Below a depth of 1000 meters there is no light at all.

Today, we know about the general structure of the sea, the characteristics of the living things in it, its salinity, as well as the amount of water it contains, its surface area and depth. Submarines and special equipment, developed with modern technology, enable scientists to obtain this information.

Human beings are not able to dive more than 40 meters down without the aid of special equipment. They cannot survive unaided in the deep, dark parts of the oceans, such as at a depth of 200 meters. For these reasons, scientists have only recently been able to discover these detailed pieces of information about seas. However, the statement of "darkness in a deep sea" was used in Sura Nur 1,400 years ago. It is certainly one of the miracles of the Qur'an that such information was given at a time where no equipment to enable man to dive into the depths of the oceans was available.

In addition, the statement in verse 40 of Sura Nur "...like the darkness of a fathomless sea which is covered by waves above which are waves above which are clouds..." draws our attention to another miracle of the Qur'an.

Scientists have recently discovered that there are internal waves, which "occur on density interfaces between layers of different densities." These internal waves cover the deep waters of seas and oceans because deep water has a higher density than the water above it. Internal waves act like surface waves. They can break, just like surface waves. Internal waves cannot be seen by the human eye, but they can be detected by studying temperature or salinity changes at a given location.

The statements in the Qur'an run absolutely parallel to the above explanation. Without research, one can only see the waves on the surface of the sea. It is impossible for one to know about the internal waves beneath the sea. Yet, in Sura Nur, God draws our attention to another type of wave that occurs in the depths of the oceans. Certainly, this fact, which scientists has discovered very recently, shows once again that the Qur'an is the word of God.

## **17. The Region That Controls Our Movements**

"No indeed! If he does not stop, We will grab him by the forelock, a lying, sinful forelock."  
(The Qur'an, 96:15-16)

The expression "the lying, sinful forelock" in the above verse is most interesting. Research carried out in recent years revealed that the prefrontal area, which is responsible for the management of particular functions of the brain, lies in the frontal part of the skull. Scientists only discovered the functions of this area, which the Qur'an pointed out 1,400 years ago, in the last 60 years. If we look inside the skull at the front of the head, we will find the frontal area of the cerebrum. A book entitled *Essentials of Anatomy and Physiology*, which includes the results of the latest research on the functions of this area, says:

The motivation and the foresight to plan and initiate movements occur in the anterior portion of the frontal lobes, the prefrontal area. This is a region of association cortex.

The book also says:

In relation to its involvement in motivation, the prefrontal area is also thought to be the functional center for aggression...

So, this area of the cerebrum is responsible for planning, motivation, and initiating good and sinful behavior, and is responsible for telling lies and the truth.

It is clear that the statement "the lying, sinful forelock" corresponds completely to the above explanations. This fact, which scientists have only discovered in the last 60 years, was stated by God in the Qur'an long years ago.

### **18. The Identity in the Fingerprint**

While it is stated in the Qur'an that it is easy for God to bring man back to life after death, peoples' fingerprints are particularly emphasized:

"Yes, We are able to put together in perfect order the very tips of his fingers."  
(The Qur'an, 75:3-4)

Everyone, including identical twins, has a unique fingerprint. In other words, people's identities are coded at their fingertips. This coding system may also be compared to the barcode system that is used today

The emphasis on fingerprints has a very special meaning. This is because everyone's fingerprint is unique to himself. Every person who is alive or who has ever lived in this world has a set of unique fingerprints.

But what is important is that this feature of fingerprints was only discovered in the late 19th century. Before then, people regarded fingerprints as ordinary curves without any specific importance or meaning. However in the Qur'an, God points to the fingertips, which did not attract anyone's attention at that time, and calls our attention to their importance-an importance that was only finally understood in our day.

## **CONCLUSION**

### **The Qur'an is the Word of God**

All that we have seen so far shows us one clear fact: the Qur'an is such a book that all the news related in it has proved to be true. Facts about scientific subjects and the news given about the future, facts that no one could have known at the time, were announced in its verses. It is impossible for this information to have been known with the level of knowledge and technology of the day. It is clear that this provides clear evidence that the Qur'an is not the word of man. The Qur'an is the word of the Almighty God, the Originator of everything and the One Who encompasses everything with His knowledge. In one verse, God says on the Qur'an **"If it had**

**been from other than God, they would have found many inconsistencies in it."** (The Qur'an, 4:82) Not only are there no inconsistencies in the Qur'an, but every piece of information it contains reveals the miracle of this divine book more and more each day.

What falls to man is to hold fast to this divine book revealed by God, and receive it as his one and only guide. In one of the verses, God calls out to us:

"And this is a Book We have sent down and blessed, so follow it and have fear of God so that hopefully you will gain mercy." (The Qur'an, 6:155)

In His other verses, God remarks:

"Say: 'It is the truth from your Lord. Let anyone who wishes to, believe, and let anyone who wishes to, disbelieve.'" (The Qur'an, 18:29)

"No indeed! Truly it (the Qur'an) is a reminder, and whoever wills pays heed to it."  
(The Qur'an, 80:11-12)

## CHAPTER FOUR

### SCIENTIFIC ERRORS IN THE BIBLE

#### **Point No.1 – The Creation of the Universe in Six (6) 24 hours.**

- In the book of Genesis chapter 1, the Bible says... “Almighty God created the Heavens and the Earth, in six days and talks about evening and a morning, referring to a 24 - hour day.” However today scientists tell us, that the universe cannot be created in a 24 hour period of six days. The *Qur'an* too speaks about six ‘*ayyams*’. The Arabic word singular is ‘*yaum*’ plural is ‘*ayyam*’. It can either mean a day of 24 hours, or it is a very long period, an ‘*yaum*’, an epoch. Scientists say we have no objection in agreeing that the universe could have been created in 6 very long periods.

#### **Point No.2 – Light was created before the source of Light**

- In Genesis 1:3 & 5, the Bible says “Light was created on the first day.” But in Genesis 1:14-19 the cause of light - stars and the sun, etc. was created on the fourth day. How can the cause of light be created on the 4<sup>th</sup> day - later than the light which came into existence on the first day? - It is unscientific.

#### **Point No.3 – Day came into existence before the creation of the Earth.**

- In Genesis 1:9-13, the Bible says “Earth was created on the 3<sup>rd</sup> day”. How can you have a night and day without the earth? The day depends upon the rotation of the Earth. Without the earth created, how can you have a night and day?

#### **Point No..4 -- Earth came into existence before Sun.**

- In Genesis 1:9-13, the Bible says “Earth was created on the 3<sup>rd</sup> day”. And In Genesis 1:14-19, the Bible also says that “The Sun and the Moon were created on the fourth day.” But today science tells us that “Earth is part of the parent body (The Sun)”. It cannot come into existence before the sun – It is unscientific.

#### **Point No. 5 –Vegetation came into existence, before sunlight**

- In Genesis 1:11-13, the Bible says “The vegetation, the herbs the shrubs, the trees etc. Were created on the 3<sup>rd</sup> day And the Sun, in Genesis 1:14-19, was created on the 4<sup>th</sup> day. How can the vegetation come into existence without sunlight, and how can they survive without sunlight?

### **Point No.6 –Light of the Moon is its own light**

- In Genesis 1:16, the Bible says “God created two lights the greater light, the Sun to rule the day, and the lesser light the Moon, to rule the night”. The actual translation, if we go to the Hebrew text, it says ‘LAMPS hence ‘LAMPS HAVING LIGHT OF ITS OWN.’ Then the next verse i.e. Genesis 1:17 says “And Almighty God placed them in the firmament, to give light to the earth”. ‘To give light to the earth.’ Indicating that both the Sun and the Moon have their own light. And this contradicts the established scientific knowledge that we have.

**NOTE:** There are certain people who try and re-conciliate and say that the six days mentioned in the *Bible* actually refers to epochs like the *Qur’an* long periods and not six, 24 hour day. And that is illogical because in Genesis 1:5 **EVENING** and **MORNING** are mentioned as part of the first day clearly indicating the 24 hours day. But even if we agree with their illogical argument, Yet, they will only be able to solve the 1<sup>st</sup> scientific error of 6 days creation and probably the second of first day ‘light’ and 3<sup>rd</sup> day ‘earth’ sequences. But they still won’t be able to solve the remaining four grave errors. And some again still argue saying “If it is a 24-hour period, why cannot the vegetables survive for one 24 hour day without sunlight?” and our response is “Fine- But If you say that the vegetables were created before the sun, and can survive for one 24-hour day, We have got no objection. But you cannot say the days mentioned are 24 hours as well as epochs - You cannot have the cake and eat it, both. If you say it is long period, you solve Point No.1 and 3, the remaining 4 are yet there. If you say the days are 24 hours day, you solve only Point No.5 - the remaining 5 are yet there - It becomes unscientific.

We leave it to Christian and Jew scholars to choose if they either want to say “It is long period” and confirm that there are only 4 scientific errors in God’s holy-book or if they want to say “It is 24 hours day” and admit that there are only 5 scientific errors in the creation of the universe.

### **Point No. 7 – The Earth - Will it perish or will it abide forever?**

- There are various Scientists who have described ‘How the world will end’. Some may be right or some may be wrong. We can either say the world will perish or the world will live forever because both cannot take place simultaneously, It will be unscientific.

But that is exactly what the *Bible* says. In Hebrews 1:10-11 and In 102:25-26, the Bible says “Almighty God created the Heavens and the Earth, and they will perish”. However the exact opposite is mentioned in the book of Ecclesiastics1:4, and in the book of Psalms78:69 saying “The earth will abide forever”. We leave it to Christian scholars to choose which of the two Verses are unscientific - the first pair or the second pair. One has to be unscientific - Both cannot take place. The world cannot abide forever as well as perish – It is unscientific.

### **Point No. 8 –The heavens have got pillars.**

- In the book of Job 26:11, the Bible says “the pillars of the Heaven will tremble”, The *Qur’an* in 31:10, however, says “The Heavens are without any pillars”

### **Point No. 9 –The earth has got pillars.**

- In addition to the Heavens having Pillars, The Bible assigns Pillars to the Earth as well in the Books of Samuel 2:8, book of Job 9:6 and in the book of Psalms 75:3.

### **Point No. 10 –God said “You can have all plants and all vegetation, including the poisonous plants?”**

- In the book of Genesis 1:29, the Bible says “God has given you all the herbs bearing seeds, the trees bearing fruits - those that bear seed, as meat for you.”

The New International Version Bible says “The seed bearing plants and the trees bearing fruits bearing seeds are food for you, all of them”.

However, Today, even a layman knows that there are several **poisonous plants** like wild berries, stritchi, datura, plants containing alkaloid, polyander, bacaipoid - that which if we ingest or if we eat them, there are high possibilities that we may die.

How come the Creator of the universe and the human beings, does not know, everything is not eatable?

### **Point No. 11 –The scientific test or the falsification test, of Mark 16:17 & 18**

- The *Bible* has a scientific test as to how to identify a true believer. The Gospel of Mark 16:17-18 says “There will be signs for true believers and among the signs - ***In my name they shall cast out devils, they shall speak foreign tongues (new tongues), they shall take up serpents - And if they drink deadly poison, they shall not be harmed - And when they place their hand over the sick, they shall be cured***”. This is a scientific test - In scientific terminology, it is known as the ‘confirmatory test’ for a true Christian believer. Yet, we have not come across a single Christian who could be volunteer to drink a poison or dare to speak a language he never spoke before to prove his faith.

### **Point No. 12 – A woman remains unclean for double the period, if she gives birth to a daughter, as compared to a son.**

- We know medically that after a mother gives birth to a child, the post-partum period, is unhygienic. But the book of Leviticus 12:1-5 says “After a **woman gives birth to a male**



**child**, she will be unclean for 7 days, and the period of un-cleanliness will continue for 33 days more. If she gives birth to a female child, she will be unclean for two (2) weeks, and the period of un-cleanliness will continue for 66 days”.

In short, if a woman gives birth to a male child... ‘a son’, she is unclean for 40 days and If she gives birth to a female child ‘a daughter’, she is unclean for 80 days. We invite the Christian scholars to scientifically explain how a woman remains unclean for double the period, if she gives birth to a female child, as compared to a male child.

### **Point No. 13 – Using blood to disinfect the house, against plague of leprosy.**

- In the book of Leviticus 14:49-53, the Bible gives unscientific way for disinfecting a house from plague of **leprosy**. It says ““Take two birds, kill one bird, take wood, scale it - and the other living bird, dip it in water... and under running water - later on sprinkle the house 7 times with it”. The Bible commands us to Sprinkle the house with blood to disinfect against plague of leprosy!!! And we all know that blood is a good media of germs, bacteria, as well as toxin let alone disinfect a plague by itself.

### **Point No. 14 –How do you find out the bitter water test for adultery?**

- The *Bible* also has a very weird **test for adultery ( How to come to know if a woman has committed adultery)**.

In the book of Numbers 5:11-31, the Bible says”The priest should take holy water in a vessel, take dust from the floor, and put it into the vessel - And that is the bitter water ‘And after cursing it, give it to the woman And if the woman has committed adultery, after she drinks it, the curse will enter her body and the stomach will swell and her thigh will rot, and she shall be cursed by the people. If the woman has not committed adultery, she will remain clean and she will bear the seed.

Why don’t the Christians in the west and any part of the world use this method of testing adultery in their courts?

### **Point No. 15 – Mathematical Contradictions**

- When the book of Ezra 2:65 says “There were 200 singing men and women”, the book of Nehemiah 7:67 however says “There were 245 singing men and women”. Were they 200 - or were they 245 singing men and women?
- Please refer Chapter One, Contradictions in the Old & New Testament sections of this book for further mathematical errors.

## CHAPTER FIVE

### The most common questions Asked by Christian missionaries against Islam

- **Question # 1 : Is it not true that Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) has copied the Qur'an from the Bible?**

#### ANSWER:

Many critics allege that Prophet Muhammad (PBUH) himself was not the author of the Qur'an but he learnt it and/or plagiarized (copied or adapted) it from other human sources or from previous scriptures or revelations.

#### **1. THE FIRST ALLEGATION THAT THE PROPHET MUHAMMAD (PBUH) LEARNT THE QUR'AN FROM A ROMAN BLACKSMITH WHO WAS A CHRISTIAN**

Some Pagans accused the Prophet of learning the Qur'an from a Roman Blacksmith, who was a Christian staying at the outskirts of Makkah. The Prophet very often used to go and watch him do his work. A revelation of the Qur'an was sufficient to dismiss this charge - the Qur'an says in

Surah An-Nahl, chapter 16 verse 103:

- "We know indeed that they say, 'It is a man that teaches him,' the tongue of him they wickedly point to is notably foreign, while this is Arabic, pure and clear." [Al-Qur'an 16:103]

How could a person whose mother tongue was foreign and could hardly speak little but of poor broken Arabic be the source of the Qur'an which is pure, eloquent, fine Arabic? To believe that the blacksmith taught the Prophet the Qur'an is somewhat similar to believing that a Chinese immigrant to England, who did not know proper English, taught Shakespeare.

#### **2. THE SECOND ALLEGATION THAT THE PROPHET MUHAMMAD (PBUH) LEARNT FROM WARQA - THE RELATIVE OF KHADIJAH (RA)**

Muhammad's (PBUH) contacts with the Jewish and Christian Scholars were very limited. The most prominent Christian known to him was an old blind man called Waraqa ibn-Naufal who was a relative of the Prophet's first wife Khadijah (r.a.). Although of Arab descent, he was a convert to Christianity and was very well versed with the New Testament. The Prophet only met him twice, first when Waraqa was worshipping at the Kaaba (before the Prophetic Mission) and he kissed the Prophet's forehead affectionately; the second occasion was when the Prophet went to meet Waraqa after receiving the first revelation. Waraqa died three years later and the

revelation continued for about 23 years. It is ridiculous to assume that Waraqa was the source of the contents of the Qur'an.

### **3. THE THIRD ALLEGATION ABOUT THE PROPHET'S RELIGIOUS DISCUSSIONS WITH THE JEWS AND CHRISTIANS**

It is true that the Prophet did have religious discussions with the Jews and Christians but they took place in Madinah more than 13 years after the revelation of the Qur'an had started. The allegation that these Jews and Christians were the source is perverse, since in these discussions Prophet Muhammad (PBUH) was performing the roles of a teacher and of a preacher while inviting them to embrace Islam and pointing out that they had deviated from their true teachings of Monotheism. Several of these Jews and Christians later embraced Islam.

### **4. THE FOURTH ALLEGATION THAT THE PROPHET LEARNT THE QUR'AN FROM THOSE JEWS AND CHRISTIANS THAT HE MET OUTSIDE ARABIA**

All historical records available show that the prophet Muhammad (PBUH) had made only three trips outside Makkah before his Prophet-hood:

At the age of 9 he accompanied his mother to Madinah.

Between the age of 9 and 12, he accompanied his uncle Abu-Talib on a business trip to Syria.

At the age of 25 he (pbuh) led Khadija's (r.a) Caravan to Syria.

It is highly imaginary to assume that the Qur'an resulted from the occasional chats and meetings with the Christians or Jews from any of the above three trips.

### **5. LOGICAL GROUNDS TO PROVE THAT THE PROPHET (PBUH) DID NOT LEARN THE QUR'AN FROM JEWS OR CHRISTIANS**

The day-to-day life of the Prophet (pbuh) was an open book for all to see. In fact a revelation came asking people to give the Prophet (PBUH) privacy in his own home. If the Prophet had been meeting people who told him what to say as a revelation from God, this would not have been hidden for very long.

The extremely prominent Quraish nobles who followed the Prophet (pbuh) and accepted Islam were wise and intelligent men who would have easily noticed anything suspicious about the way in which the Prophet brought the revelations to them - more so since the Prophetic mission lasted 23 years.

The enemies of the Prophet (PBUH) kept a close watch on him in order to find proof for their claim that he was a liar - they could not point out even a single instance when the Prophet may have had a secret rendezvous with particular Jews and Christians.

It is inconceivable that any human author of the Qur'an would have accepted a situation in which he received no credit whatsoever for originating the Qur'an.

Thus, historically and logically it cannot be established that there was a human source for the Qur'an.

## **6. MUHAMMAD (PBUH) WAS AN ILLITERATE**

The theory that Muhammad (PBUH) authored the Qur'an or copied from other sources can be disproved by the single historical fact that he was illiterate.

Allah testifies Himself in the Qur'an, In Surah Al-Ankabut, chapter no.29 verse 48

- "And thou was not (able) to recite a Book before this (Book came), nor art thou (able) to transcribe it with thy right hand: in that case, indeed, would talkers of vanities have doubted." [Al-Qur'an 29:48]

Allah (swt) knew that many would doubt the authenticity of the Qur'an and would ascribe it to Prophet Muhammad (PBUH) Therefore Allah in His Divine Wisdom chose the last and final Messenger to be an 'Ummi', i.e. unlettered, so that the talkers of vanity would not then have the slightest justification to doubt the Prophet. The accusation of his enemies that he had copied the Qur'an from other sources and rehashed it all in a beautiful language might have carried some weight, but even this flimsy pretence has been deprived to the unbeliever and the cynic.

Allah reconfirms in the Qur'an in Surah Al A'raf chapter 7 verse 157:

- "Those who follow the Messenger, the unlettered Prophet, whom they find mentioned in their own (Scriptures) in the Law and the Gospel"

The prophecy of coming of the unlettered Prophet (pbuh) is also mentioned in the Bible in the book of Isaiah chapter 29 Verse 12.

- "And the book is delivered to him that is not learned." [Isaiah 29:12]

The Qur'an testifies in no less than four different places that the Prophet (pbuh) was illiterate. It is also mentioned in Surah A'raf chapter 7 verse 158 and in Surah Al-Jumu'a chapter 62 verse 2.

## **7. ARABIC VERSION OF THE BIBLE WAS NOT PRESENT**

The Arabic version of the Bible was not present at the time of Prophet Muhammad (PBUH). The earliest Arabic version of the Old Testament is that of R. Saadiah Gaon of 900 C.E. - more than 250 years after the death of our beloved Prophet. The oldest Arabic version of the New

Testament was published by Erpenius in 1616 C.E. - about a thousand years after the demise of our Prophet.

## **8. SIMILARITIES IN THE QUR'AN AND THE BIBLE DUE TO COMMON SOURCE**

Similarities between the Qur'an and the Bible does not necessarily mean that the former has been copied from the latter. In fact it gives evidence that both of them are based on a common third source; all divine revelations came from the same source - the one universal God. No matter what human changes were introduced into some of these Judeo-Christian and other older religious scriptures that had distorted their originality, there are some areas that have remained free from distortion and thus are common to many religions.

It is true that there are some similar parallels between the Qur'an and the Bible but this is not sufficient to accuse Muhammad (PBUH) of compiling or copying from the Bible. The same logic would then also be applicable to teachings of Christianity and Judaism and thus one could wrongly claim that Jesus (PBUH) was not a genuine Prophet (God forbid) and that he simply copied from the Old Testament.

The similarities between the two signify a common source that is one true God and the continuation of the basic message of monotheism and not that the later prophets have plagiarized from the previous prophets.

If someone copies during an examination he will surely not write in the answer sheet that he has copied from his neighbor or Mr. XYZ. Prophet Muhammad (PBUH) gave due respect and credit to all the previous prophets (PBUT). The Qur'an also mentions the various revelations given by Almighty God to different prophets.

## **9. MUSLIMS BELIEVE IN THE TAURAH, ZABOOR, INJEEL AND QUR'AN**

Four revelations of Allah (swt) are mentioned by name in the Qur'an: the Taurah, the Zaboor, the Injeel and the Qur'an.

Taurah, the revelation i.e. the 'Wahi' given to Moosa (a. s.) i.e. Moses (pbuh). Zaboor, the revelation i.e. the Wahi given to Dawood (a.s.) i.e. David (pbuh). Injeel, the revelation i.e. the Wahi given to Isa (A.S.) ie. Jesus (pbuh). 'Al-Qur'an', the last and final Wahi i.e. revelation given to the last and final Messenger Muhammad (pbuh).

It is an article of faith for every Muslim to believe in all the Prophets of God and all revelations of God. However, the present day Bible has the first five books of the Old Testament attributed to Moses and the Psalms attributed to David. Moreover the New Testament or the four Gospels of the New Testament are not the Taurah, the Zaboor or the Injeel, which the Qur'an refers to. These books of the present day Bible may partly contain the word of God but these books are certainly not the exact, accurate and complete revelations given to the prophets.

The Qur'an presents all the different prophets of Allah as belonging to one single brotherhood; all had a similar prophetic mission and the same basic message. Because of this, the fundamental teachings of the major faiths cannot be contradictory, even if there has been a considerable passage of time between the different prophetic missions, because the source of these missions was one: Almighty God, Allah. This is why the Qur'an says that the differences which exist between various religions are not the responsibility of the prophets, but of the followers of these prophets who forgot part of what they had been taught, and furthermore, misinterpreted and changed the scriptures.

The Qur'an cannot therefore be seen as a scripture which competes with the teachings of Moses, Jesus and the other prophets. On the contrary, it confirms, completes and perfects the messages that they brought to their people. Another name for the Qur'an is the 'The Furqan' which means the criteria to judge the right from the wrong, and it is on the basis of the Qur'an that we can decipher which part of the previous scriptures can be considered to be the word of God.

## 10. SCIENTIFIC COMPARISON BETWEEN QUR'AN AND BIBLE

If you glance through the Bible and the Qur'an you may find several points which appear to be exactly the same in both of them, but when you analyze them closely, you realize that there is a difference of 'chalk and cheese' between them. Only based on historical details it is difficult for someone who is neither conversant with Christianity or Islam to come to a firm decision as to which of the scriptures is true; however if you verify the relevant passages of both the scriptures against scientific knowledge, you will yourself realize the truth.

**Creation of the Universe in Six Days:** As per the Bible, in the first book of Genesis in Chapter One, the universe was created in six days and each day is defined as a twenty-four hours period. Even though the Qur'an mentions that the universe was created in six 'Ayyaams', 'Ayyaam' is the plural of years; this word has two meanings: firstly, it means a standard twenty-four hours period i.e. a day, and secondly, it also means stage, period or epoch which is a very long period of time.

When the Qur'an mentions that the universe was created in six 'Ayyaams', it refers to the creation of the heavens and the earth in six long periods or epochs; scientists have no objection to this statement. The creation of the universe has taken billions of years, which proves false or contradicts the concept of the Bible which states that the creation of the Universe took six days of twenty-four hour durations each.

**Sun Created After the Day:** The Bible says in chapter 1, verses 3-5, of Genesis that the phenomenon of day and night was created on the first day of creation of the Universe by God. The light circulating in the universe is the result of a complex reaction in the stars; these stars were created according to the Bible (Genesis chapter 1 verse 14 to 19) on the fourth day. It is illogical to mention the result that is the light (the phenomenon of day and night) was created

on the first day of Creation when the cause or source of the light was created three days later. Moreover the existence of evening and morning as elements of a single day is only conceivable after the creation of the earth and its rotation around the sun. In contrast with the contents of the Bible on this issue, the Qur'an does not give any unscientific sequence of Creation.

Hence it is absolutely absurd to say that Prophet Muhammad (PBUH) copied the passages pertaining to the creation of the universe from the Bible but missed out this illogical and fantastic sequence of the Bible.

**Creation of the Sun, The Earth and the Moon** According to the Bible, Book of Genesis, chapter 1, verses 9 to 13, the earth was created on the third day, and as per verses 14 to 19, the sun and the moon were created on the fourth day. The earth and the moon emanated, as we know, from their original star, the Sun. Hence to place the creation of the sun and the moon after the creation of the earth is contrary to the established idea about the formation of the solar system.

**Vegetation Created on the third day and Sun on the fourth day** According to the Bible, Book of Genesis, chapter 1, verses 11-13, vegetation was created on the third day along with seed-bearing grasses, plants and trees; and further on as per verses 14-19, the sun was created on the fourth day. How is it scientifically possible for the vegetation to have appeared without the presence of the sun, as has been stated in the Bible?

If Prophet Muhammad (PBUH) was indeed the author of the Qur'an and had copied its contents from the Bible, how did he manage to avoid the factual errors that the Bible contains? The Qur'an does not contain any statements which are incompatible with scientific facts.

**The Sun and the Moon both Emit light** According to the Bible both the sun and the moon emit their own light. In the Book of Genesis, chapter 1, verse 16 says, "And God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night".

Science tells us today that the moon does not have its own light. This confirms the Qur'anic concept that the light of the moon is a reflected light. To think that 1400 years ago, Prophet Muhammad (PBUH) corrected these scientific errors in the Bible and then copied such corrected passages in the Qur'an is to think of something impossible.

## **11. ADAM (PBUH), THE FIRST MAN ON EARTH, LIVED 5,800 YEARS AGO**

As per the genealogy of Jesus Christ given in the Bible, from Jesus through Abraham (PBUH) to the first man on earth i.e. Adam (PBUH), Adam appeared on the earth approximately 5800 years ago:

1948 years between Adam (PBUH) and Abraham (PBUH)

Approximately 1800 years between Abraham (PBUH) and Jesus (PBUH)

2000 years from Jesus (PBUH) till today.

These figures are further confused by the fact that the Jewish calendar is currently on or about 5800 years old.

There is sufficient evidence from archaeological and anthropological sources to suggest that the first human being on earth was present tens of thousands of years ago and not merely 5,800 years ago as is suggested by the Bible. The Qur'an too speaks about Adam (PBUH) as the first man on earth but it does not suggest any date or period of his life on earth, unlike the Bible - what the Bible says in this regard is totally incompatible with science.

## **12. NOAH (PBUH) AND THE FLOOD**

The Biblical description of the flood in Genesis chapter 6, 7 and 8 indicates that the deluge was universal and it destroyed every living thing on earth, except those present with Noah (PBUH) in the ark. The description suggests that the event took place 1656 years after the creation of Adam (PBUH) or 292 years before the birth of Abraham, at a time when Noah (PBUH) was 600 years old. Thus the flood may have occurred in the 21st or 22nd Century B.C.

This story of the flood, as given in the Bible, contradicts scientific evidence from archaeological sources which indicate that the eleventh dynasty in Egypt and the third dynasty in Babylonia were in existence without any break in civilization and in a manner totally unaffected by any major calamity which may have occurred in the 21st century B.C. This contradicts the Biblical story that the whole world had been immersed in the flood water.

In contrast to this, the Qur'anic presentation of the story of Noah and the flood does not conflict with scientific evidence or archaeological data; firstly, the Qur'an does not indicate any specific date or year of the occurrence of that event, and secondly, according to the Qur'an the flood was not a universal phenomenon which destroyed complete life on earth. In fact the Qur'an specifically mentions that the flood was a localized event only involving the people of Noah.

It is illogical to assume that Prophet Muhammad (PBUH) had borrowed the story of the flood from the Bible and corrected the mistakes before mentioning it in the Qur'an.

## **13. MOSES (PBUH) AND PHARAOH OF THE EXODUS**

The story of Moses (PBUH) and the Pharaoh of the Exodus are very much identical in the Qur'an and the Bible. Both scriptures agree that the Pharaoh drowned when he tried to pursue Moses (PBUH) and led the Israelites across a stretch of water that they crossed.

The Qur'an gives an additional piece of information in Surah Yunus chapter 10 verse 92:



- "This day shall we save thee in thy body, that thou mayest be a sign to those who come after thee! But verily, many among mankind are heedless of Our Signs!" [Al-Qur'an 10:92]

Dr. Maurice Bucaille, after a thorough research proved that although Rameses II was known to have persecuted the Israelites as per the Bible, he actually died while Moses (PBUH) was taking refuge in Median. Rameses II's son Merneptah who succeeded him as Pharaoh drowned during the exodus. In 1898, the mummified body of Merneptah was found in the valley of Kings in Egypt. In 1975, Dr. Maurice Bucaille with other doctors received permission to examine the Mummy of Merneptah, the findings of which proved that Merneptah probably died from drowning or a violent shock which immediately preceded the moment of drowning.

Thus the Qur'anic verse that we shall save his body as a sign, has been fulfilled by the Pharaohs' body being kept at the Royal Mummies room in the Egyptian Museum in Cairo.

This verse of the Qur'an compelled Dr. Maurice Bucaille, who was a Christian then, to study the Qur'an. He later wrote a book 'The Bible, the Qur'an and Science', and confessed that the author of the Qur'an can be no one else besides God Himself. Thus he embraced Islam.

#### **14. QUR'AN IS A BOOK FROM ALLAH**

These evidences are sufficient to conclude that the Qur'an was not copied from the Bible, but that the Qur'an is the Furqaan - 'the Criteria' to judge right from wrong and it should be used to decipher which portion of the Bible may be considered as the Word of God.

The Qur'an itself testifies in Surah Sajda chapter 32 verse 1 to 3

- Alif Laam Meem. (This is) the revelation of the Book in which there is no doubt – from the Lord of the Worlds. Or do they say, 'He has forged it'? Nay, it is the Truth from thy Lord, that thou mayest admonish a people to whom no warner has come before thee: in order that they may receive guidance." [Al-Qur'an 32:1-3]

- **Question #2: It is mentioned in the Qur'an that Mary was the sister of Aaron (pbuh). Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) who wrote the Qur'an did not know the difference between Miriam the sister of Aaron (pbuh) and Mary the Mother of Jesus (pbuh), the time span between both of them was about a thousand years.**

#### **ANSWER:**

##### **1. IN THE SEMITIC LANGUAGES SISTER ALSO MEANS DESCENDANT**

The Qur'an mentions in Surah Maryam, Chapter 19 verses 27-28

- "At length she brought the (babe) to her people, carrying him (in her arms). They said: 'O Mary! Truly an amazing thing hast thou brought! O sister of Aaron! Thy father was not a man of evil, nor thy mother a woman unchaste!'" [Al-Qur'an 19:27-28]

Christian missionaries say that Prophet Muhammad (PBUH) did not know the difference between Mary the mother of Jesus (pbuh) and Miriam the sister of Aaron (PBUH). The time span between both was more than a thousand years.

In the Arabic construction of the sentence, sister is also considered as a descendant. Thus, when the people said to Mary, Ukhta Haroon i.e. 'sister of Aaron' it actually means descendant of Aaron (PBUH).

##### **2. SON ALSO MEANS DESCENDANT**

It is mentioned in the Gospel of Mathew, Chapter 1 verse 1

- "Jesus Christ, the son of David,...." [Mathew 1:1]
- "And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph,....." [Luke 3:23]

**DID JESUS (PBUH) HAVE TWO FATHERS?** What do you call a person who has two fathers? The explanation of the phrase that Jesus (pbuh) was the son of David (pbuh), is that Jesus (PBUH) was a descendant of David (PBUH). 'Son', here means a descendant.

➤ **Question #3 : Is it not true that the Qur'an mentions in Surah Maryam, Chapter 19 verse 33 that Jesus (PBUH) died and was resurrected?**

**ANSWER:**

**JESUS (PBUH) SAID, "THE DAY THAT I DIE", NOT "THE DAY THAT I DIED"**

It is mentioned in Surah Maryam, Chapter 19 verse 33

- "So Peace is on me the day I was born, the day that I die and the Day that I shall be raised up to life (again)". [Al-Qur'an 19:33]

The Qur'an mentions that Jesus (PBUH) said "Peace is on me the Day I was born, the day that I die". It is not stated "the day that I died". It is in the future tense and not in the past tense.

### **1. JESUS (PBUH) WAS RAISED UP ALIVE**

The Qur'an further says in Surah Nisa, Chapter 4 verse 157-158:

- "That they said (in boast), 'We killed Jesus Christ the son of Mary, the Messenger of Allah' – But they killed him not, Nor crucified him, but so it was made to appear to them, and those who differ therein are full of doubts, with no (certain) knowledge, but only conjecture to follow, for of a surety they killed him not – Nay, Allah raised him up unto Himself; and Allah is exalted in Power, Wise." [Al-Qur'an 4:157-158]

➤ **Question #4 : Does not the Qur'an mention that Jesus is Kalimatullah – "The Word of Allah (swt)", as well as Ruhullah – "The Spirit of Allah", indicating his Divinity?**

**ANSWER:**

### **1. JESUS (PBUH) "IS A WORD FROM ALLAH" NOT "THE WORD OF ALLAH"**

The Qur'an mentions in Surah Ali 'Imran Chapter 3 verse 45

- "Behold! The angels said: O Mary! Allah giveth thee glad tidings of a Word from Him: his name will be Christ Jesus. The son of Mary, held in honour in this world and the Hereafter and of (the company of) those Nearest to Allah. [Al-Qur'an 3:45]

Jesus (PBUH) is referred in the Qur'an as a word from Allah and not as 'the word of Allah'.

"A word" of Allah means a message of Allah. If a person is referred to as "a word" from Allah, it means that he is a Messenger or a Prophet of Allah.

### **2. THE TITLE OF A PROPHET (PBUH) DOES NOT MEAN THAT IT EXCLUSIVELY BELONGS TO THAT PROPHET (PBUH)**

Different titles are given to different prophets (PBUT). Whenever a title is given to a prophet (PBUH), it does not necessarily mean that the other prophets do not have the same

characteristic or quality. For e.g. Prophet Abraham (pbuh) is referred to in the Qur'an as Khaleelullah, a friend of Allah. This does not indicate that all the other Prophets (pbuh) were not the friends of Allah. Prophet Moses (pbuh) is referred to in the Qur'an as Kaleemullah, indicating that God spoke to him. This does not mean that God did not speak to others.

Similarly when Jesus (pbuh) is referred to in the Qur'an as Kalimatullah, "a word from Allah", it does not mean that the other Prophets were not "the word," of Allah.

### **3. JOHN THE BAPTIST (PBUH) IS ALSO CALLED "A WORD" OF ALLAH**

Yahya ((PBUH) i.e. John the Baptist (pbuh) is also referred to in the Qur'an as Kalimatullah i.e. a word of Allah in Surah Ali 'Imran, Chapter 3, verses 38-39

- "There did Zakariya Pray to his Lord, saying: "O my Lord! Grant unto me from Thee a progeny that is pure: for Thou art He that heareth prayer! While he was standing in prayer in the chamber, the angels called unto him: "Allah doth give thee glad tidings of Yahya, witnessing the truth of a Word from Allah, and (be besides) noble, chaste, and a Prophet – of the (goodly) company of the righteous." [Al-Qur'an 3:39]

### **4. JESUS (PBUH) REFERRED AS RUHULLAH – A SPIRIT OF ALLAH**

Jesus (PBUH) also never referred to as Ruhullah "a spirit of Allah" but as a spirit from Allah in Surah Nisa Chapter 4 verse 171

- "O People of the Book! Commit no excesses in your religion: nor say of Allah aught but the truth. Jesus Christ the son of Mary was (no more than) a Messenger of Allah, And His Word, which He bestowed on Mary, and a Spirit proceeding from Him: so believe in Allah and His Messengers. Say not 'Trinity': desist: it will be better for you: for Allah is One God: glory be to Him: (Far Exalted is He) above having a son. To Him belong all things in the heavens and on earth. And enough is Allah as a Disposer of affairs." [Al-Qur'an 4:171]

### **5. SPIRIT OF ALLAH IS BREATHED IN EVERY HUMAN BEING**

A spirit from Allah does not indicate that Jesus (pbuh) is God. The Qur'an mentions in several places that Allah breathed into the human beings "His Spirit" in Surah Al-Hijr, chapter 15 verse 29 in Surah Sajdah, chapter 32 verse 9 Surah Al Hijr Chapter 15 verse 29

- "When I have fashioned him (in due proportion) and breathed into him of My spirit, fall ye down in obedience unto him." [Al-Qur'an 15:29]
- "But He fashioned him in due proportion, and breathed into him something of His spirit. And He gave you (the faculties of) hearing and sight and feeling (and understanding); little thanks do ye give!" [Al-Qur'an 32:9]

➤ **Question #5: The Qur'an is not the Word of God but on the contrary the handiwork of Satan.**

**ANSWER:**

In reply to a similar allegation put forward by the pagans of Makkah, that the prophet (pbuh) received the revelations from Satan, the following verses were revealed:

- "That this is indeed a Qur'an most honourable, In a Book well-guarded, which none shall touch But those who are clean. A Revelation from the Lord Of the Worlds."

Kitabim Maknoon means a book well guarded or a protected book, referring to Lauh-e-Mahfooz in the heaven, which none shall touch except the Mutahhareen. i.e. those who do not have any un-cleanliness or impurity or evil like sin. This refers to the angels. The Satan is absolutely prohibited. Thus since it is impossible for Satan to come anywhere close to it or touch it, the question of him writing the verses of the Glorious Qur'an does not arise.

It is further mentioned in Surah Shura, chapter 26 verse 210-212

- "No evil ones have brought Down this (Revelation): It would neither suit. them Nor would they be able (To produce it). Indeed they have been removed far from even ( a chance of) Hearing it."

Many people have a wrong concept of Satan. They think that Satan can probably do everything, except a couple of things that God can do. According to them, satan is slightly below God in power. Since the people do not want to accept that the Qur'an is a miraculous revelation, they say that it is satan's handiwork.

If satan would have written the Qur'an, he would not have mentioned in the same Qur'an in Surah Nahl, chapter 16 verse no. 98 "When thou does read The Qur'an, seek Allah's protection from Satan the Rejected One." Is this how you feel satan would write a book? Does he tell you; "Before you read my book ask God to save you from me?"

There are several verses in the Qur'an which will give enough evidence that satan is not the author of the Qur'an. In Surah Al Aaraf chapter 7 verse 200 "If a suggestion from Satan assails your (mind), seek refuge with Allah; for He hears and knows (all things).

Why would satan tell his followers, that whenever he gives any suggestions to them, they should seek refuge in Allah (swt) to whom he is an avowed enemy.

In Surah Baqarah, chapter 2 verse 168 "O ye people! Eat of what is on earth, lawful and good; and do not follow the footsteps of the Evil one, For he is to you an avowed enemy."

In Surah Yasin, chapter 36 verse 60 "Did I not enjoin on you, O ye children of Adam, that ye should not worship Satan; for that he was to you an enemy avowed?"

Satan is intelligent, no wonder that he can put this idea into the minds of people that he himself wrote the Qur'an. Compared to Almighty God, Satan is insignificant, and Allah (swt) is far more intelligent. He knows Satan's evil intentions and hence no wonder that He has given the reader of the Qur'an several proofs to show that Qur'an is God's word, and not Satan's word.

The Bible mentions in the Gospel of Mark, chapter 3, verses 24-26

"And if a kingdom be divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand."

"And if a house be divided against itself, that house cannot stand."

"And if Satan rise up against himself, and be divided, he cannot stand, but hath an end."

➤ **Question #6: There were many versions of the Qur'an all of which were burnt by Usman (r.a.) except for one. Therefore is it not true that the present Qur'an is the one compiled by Usman (r.a.) and not the original revelation of God?**

#### **ANSWER:**

One of the most common myths about the Qur'an, is that Usman (r.a.), the third Caliph of Islam authenticated and compiled one Qur'an, from a large set of mutually contradicting copies. The Qur'an, revered as the Word of Allah (swt) by Muslims the world over, is the same Qur'an as the one revealed to Prophet Muhammad (pbuh). It was authenticated and written under his personal supervision. We will examine the roots of the myth which says that Usman (r.a.) had the Qur'an authenticated.

#### **1. Prophet Muhammad (PBUH) himself supervised and authenticated the written texts of the Qur'an**

Whenever the Prophet received a revelation, he would first memorize it himself and later declare the revelation and instruct his Companions (R.A. – Radhi Allahu Taala Anhu) – May Allah be pleased with him who would also memorize it. The Prophet would immediately ask the scribes to write down the revelation he had received, and he would reconfirm and recheck it himself. Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) was an *Ummi* who could not read and write. Therefore, after receiving each revelation, he would repeat it to his Companions. They would write down the revelation, and he would recheck by asking them to read what they had written. If there was any mistake, the Prophet would immediately point it out and have it corrected and rechecked. Similarly he would even recheck and authenticate the portions of the Qur'an memorized by the Companions. In this way, the complete Qur'an was written down under the personal supervision of the prophet (pbuh).

## **2. Order and sequence of Qur'an divinely inspired**

The complete Qur'an was revealed over a period of 22½ years portion by portion, as and when it was required. The Qur'an was not compiled by the Prophet in the chronological order of revelation. The order and sequence of the Qur'an too was divinely inspired and was instructed to the Prophet by Allah (swt) through archangel Jibraeel. Whenever a revelation was conveyed to his companions, the Prophet would also mention in which *surah* (chapter) and after which *ayat* (verse) this new revelation should fit.

Every *Ramadh* all the portions of the Qur'an that had been revealed, including the order of the verses, were revised and reconfirmed by the Prophet with archangel Jibraeel. During the last *Ramadh*, before the demise of the Prophet, the Qur'an was rechecked and reconfirmed twice.

It is therefore clearly evident that the Qur'an was compiled and authenticated by the Prophet himself during his lifetime, both in the written form as well as in the memory of several of his Companions.

## **3. Qur'an copied on one common material**

The complete Qur'an, along with the correct sequence of the verses, was present during the time of the Prophet (pbuh). The verses however, were written on separate pieces, scrapes of leather, thin flat stones, leaflets, palm branches, shoulder blades, etc. After the demise of the prophet, Abu Bakr (r.a.), the first caliph of Islam ordered that the Qur'an be copied from the various different materials on to a common material and place, which was in the shape of sheets. These were tied with strings so that nothing of the compilation was lost.

## **4. Usman (r.a.) made copies of the Qur'an from the original manuscript**

Many Companions of the Prophet used to write down the revelation of the Qur'an on their own whenever they heard it from the lips of the Prophet. However what they wrote was not personally verified by the Prophet and thus could contain mistakes. All the verses revealed to the Prophet may not have been heard personally by all the Companions. There were high possibilities of different portions of the Qur'an being missed by different Companions. This gave rise to disputes among Muslims regarding the different contents of the Qur'an during the period of the third Caliph Usman (r.a.). Usman (r.a.) borrowed the original manuscript of the Qur'an, which was authorized by the beloved Prophet (pbuh), from Hafsha (may Allah be pleased with her), the Prophet's wife. Usman (r.a.) ordered four Companions who were among the scribes who wrote the Qur'an when the Prophet dictated it, led by Zaid bin Thabit (r.a.) to rewrite the script in several perfect copies. These were sent by Usman (r.a.) to the main centers of Muslims.

There were other personal collections of the portions of the Qur'an that people had with them. These might have been incomplete and with mistakes. Usman (r.a.) only appealed to the people to destroy all these copies which did not match the original manuscript of the Qur'an in order to preserve the original text of the Qur'an. Two such copies of the copied text of the original Qur'an authenticated by the Prophet are present to this day, one at the museum in Tashkent in erstwhile Soviet Union and the other at the Topkapi Museum in Istanbul, Turkey.

## 5. Diacritical marks were added for non-Arabs

The original manuscript of the Qur'an does not have the signs indicating the vowels in Arabic script. These vowels are known as *tashkil*, *zabar*, *zair*, *paish* in Urdu and as *fatah*, *damma* and *qasra* in Arabic. The Arabs did not require the vowel signs and diacritical marks for correct pronunciation of the Qur'an since it was their mother tongue. For Muslims of non-Arab origin, however, it was difficult to recite the Qur'an correctly without the vowels. These marks were introduced into the Quranic script during the time of the fifth 'Umayyad' Caliph, Malik-ar-Marwan (66-86 Hijri/685-705 C.E.) and during the governorship of Al-Hajaj in Iraq.

Some people argue that the present copy of the Qur'an that we have along with the vowels and the diacritical marks is not the same original Qur'an that was present at the Prophet's time. But they fail to realize that the word 'Qur'an' means a recitation. Therefore, the preservation of the recitation of the Qur'an is important, irrespective of whether the script is different or whether it contains vowels. If the pronunciation and the Arabic is the same, naturally, the meaning remains the same too.

## 6. Allah Himself has promised to guard the Qur'an

Allah has promised in the Qur'an :

- "We have, without doubt, sent down the Message; and We will assuredly Guard it (from - corruption)." [Al-Qur'an 15:9]

➤ **Question #7: Doesn't Islam promote violence, bloodshed and brutality since the Qur'an says that Muslims should kill the kuffar where ever they find them?**

### ANSWER:

A few selected verses from the Qur'an are often misquoted to perpetuate the myth that Islam promotes violence, and exhorts its followers to kill those outside the pale of Islam.

#### 1. Verse from Surah Taubah

The following verse from Surah Taubah is very often quoted by critics of Islam, to show that Islam promotes violence, bloodshed and brutality:

"Kill the *mushriqeen* (pagans, polytheists, *kuffar*) where ever you find them." [Al-Qur'an 9:5]



## 2. Context of verse is during battlefield

Critics of Islam actually quote this verse out of context. In order to understand the context, we need to read from verse 1 of this surah. It says that there was a peace treaty between the Muslims and the *Mushriqs* (pagans) of Makkah. This treaty was violated by the *Mushriqs* of Makkah. A period of four months was given to the *Mushriqs* of Makkah to make amends. Otherwise war would be declared against them. Verse 5 of Surah Taubah says: "But when the forbidden months are past, then fight and slay the Pagans wherever ye find them, and seize them, beleaguer them, and lie in wait for them in every stratagem (of war); but if they repent, and establish regular prayers and practise regular charity, then open the way for them: for Allah is oft-forgiving, Most merciful." [Al-Qur'an 9:5] This verse is quoted during a battle.

## 3. Example of war between America and Vietnam

We know that America was once at war with Vietnam. Suppose the President of America or the General of the American Army told the American soldiers during the war: "Wherever you find the Vietnamese, kill them". Today if I say that the American President said, "Wherever you find Vietnamese, kill them" without giving the context, I will make him sound like a butcher. But if I quote him in context, that he said it during a war, it will sound very logical, as he was trying to boost the morale of the American soldiers during the war.

## 4. Verse 9:5 quoted to boost morale of Muslims during battle

Similarly in Surah Taubah chapter 9 verse 5 the Qur'an says, "Kill the *Mushriqs* where ever you find them", during a battle to boost the morale of the Muslim soldiers. What the Qur'an is telling Muslim soldiers is, don't be afraid during battle; wherever you find the enemies kill them.

## 5. Shourie jumps from verse 5 to verse 7

Arun Shourie is one of the staunchest critics of Islam in India. He quotes the same verse, Surah Taubah chapter 9 verse 5 in his book 'The World of *Fatwabs*', on page 572. After quoting verse 5 he jumps to verse 7 of Surah Taubah. Any sensible person will realize that he has skipped verse 6.

## 6. Surah Taubah chapter 9 verse 6 gives the answer

Surah Taubah chapter 9 verse 6 gives the answer to the allegation that Islam promotes violence, brutality and bloodshed. It says: "If one amongst the pagans ask thee for asylum, grant it to him, so that he may hear the word of Allah; and then escort him to where he can be secure that is because they are men without knowledge." [Al-Qur'an 9:6].

The Qur'an not only says that a *Mushriq* seeking asylum during the battle should be granted refuge, but also that he should be escorted to a secure place. In the present international scenario, even a kind, peace-loving army General, during a battle, may let the enemy soldiers go free, if they want peace. But which army General will ever tell his soldiers, that if the enemy soldiers want peace during a battle, don't just let them go free, but also escort them to a place of security?

This is exactly what Allah (swt) says in the Glorious Qur'an to promote peace in the world.

➤ **Question #8: Does Islam believe in several gods because the Qur'an uses the word 'We' when God speaks in the Qur'an?**

#### **ANSWER:**

Islam is a strictly monotheistic religion. It believes in and adheres to uncompromising monotheism. It believes that God is one, and unique in His attributes. In the Qur'an, God often refers to Himself using the word 'We'. But this does not mean that Islam believes in the existence of more than one God.

Two types of plural:

In several languages, there are two types of plurals; one is a plural of numbers to refer to something that occurs in a quantity of more than one.

The other plural is a plural of respect.

(A). In the English language, the Queen of England refers to herself as 'We' instead of 'I'. This is known as the 'royal plural'.

(B). similarly in Arabic, when Allah refers to Himself in the Qur'an, He often uses Arabic word '*Nahnu*' meaning 'We'. It does not indicate plural of number but plural of respect.

Tawheed or monotheism is one of the pillars of Islam. The existence and uniqueness of one and only one God is mentioned several times in the Qur'an. For instance in Surah Ikhlas, it says :

- "Say He is Allah the One and Only." [Al-Qur'an 112: 1]

➤ **Question #9: Muslims believe in the theory of abrogation, i.e. they believe that certain earlier verses of the Qur'an were abrogated by verses revealed later. Does this imply that God made a mistake and later on corrected it?**

**ANSWER:**

### **1. Two different interpretations**

The Glorious Qur'an says in the following verse:

- "None of Our revelations do We abrogate or cause to be forgotten, but We substitute something better or similar: knowest thou not that Allah hath power over all things?" [Al-Qur'an 2:106]

A reference to this is also made in chapter 16 verse 101 of Surah Nahl. The Arabic word mentioned is *ayat* which means 'signs' or 'verses' and which can also mean 'revelations'. This verse of the Qur'an can be interpreted in two different ways:

A. The revelations that are abrogated are those revelations that were revealed before the Qur'an, for example the *Torah*, the *Zaboor* and the *Injeel*. Here Allah (swt) says that He does not cause the previous revelations to be forgotten but He substitutes them with something better or similar, indicating that the *Torah*, the *Zaboor* and the *Injeel* were substituted by the Qur'an.

B. If we consider that the Arabic word *ayat* in the above verse refers to the verses of the Qur'an, and not previous revelations, then it indicates that none of the verses of the Qur'an are abrogated by Allah but substituted with something better or similar. This means that certain verses of the Qur'an, that were revealed earlier were substituted by verses that were revealed later. I agree with both the interpretations.

Many Muslims and non-Muslims misunderstand the second interpretation to mean that some of the earlier verses of the Qur'an were abrogated and no longer hold true for us today, as they have been replaced by the later verses of the Qur'an or the abrogating verses. This group of people even wrongly believe that these verses contradict each other.

Let us analyze a few such examples.

### **2. Produce a recital like the Qur'an / 10 Surahs / 1 Surah:**

Some pagan Arabs alleged that the Qur'an was forged by Prophet Muhammad (pbuh). Allah (swt) challenges these Arabs in the following verse of Surah Al-Isra:

- "Say: If the whole of Mankind and Jinns were together to produce the like of this Qur'an they could not produce the like thereof, even if they backed up each other with help and support." [Al-Qur'an 17:88]

Later the challenge was made easy in the following verse of Surah Al-Hud:

- "Or they may say, "He forged it." Say, "Bring ye then ten Surahs forged, like unto it, and call (to your aid) whomsoever ye can, other than Allah, if ye speak the truth!'. " [Al-Qur'an 11:13]

It was made easier in the following verse of Surah Yunus:

- "Or do they say, "He forged it"? Say: "Bring then a Surah like unto it, and call (to your aid) anyone you can, besides Allah, if it be ye speak the truth!'. " [Al-Qur'an 10:38]

Finally in Surah Al-Baqarah, Allah (swt) further simplified the challenge:

- "And if ye are in doubt as to what We have revealed from time to time to Our servant, then produce a *Surah* like thereunto; and call your witnesses or helpers (if there are any) besides Allah if your (doubts) are true. But if ye cannot – and of a surety ye cannot – then fear the Fire whose fuel is Men and Stones – which is prepared for those who reject faith". [Al-Qur'an 2:23-24]

Thus Allah (swt) made the challenges progressively easier. The progressively revealed verses of the Qur'an first challenged the pagans to produce a book like the Qur'an, then challenged them to produce ten *Surahs* (chapters) like those in the Qur'an, then one *Surah* and finally it challenges them to produce one Surah somewhat similar (*mim mislihi*) to the Qur'anic *Surahs*. This does not mean that the later verses that were revealed i.e. of Surah Baqarah chapter 2 verses 23 and 24 contradict the earlier three verses. Contradiction implies mentioning two things that cannot be possible simultaneously, or cannot take place simultaneously. The earlier verses of the Qur'an i.e. the abrogated verses are still the word of God and the information contained in it is true to this day.

For instance the challenge to produce a recital like the Qur'an stands to this day. Similarly the challenge to produce ten *Surahs* and one *Surah* exactly like the Qur'an also holds true and the last challenge of producing one surah somewhat similar to the Qur'an also holds true. It does not contradict the earlier challenges, but this is the easiest of all the challenges posed by the Qur'an. If the last challenge cannot be fulfilled, the question of anyone fulfilling the other three more difficult challenges does not arise.

Suppose I speak about a person that he is so dumb, that he would not be able to pass the 10th standard in school. Later I say that he would not be able to pass the 5th standard, and further say that he would not be able to pass even the 1st standard. Finally I say that he is so dull that he would not even be able to pass K.G. i.e. kindergarten. One has to pass kindergarten before one can be admitted to school. What I am stating is that the person is so dull as to be unable to pass even kindergarten. My four statements do not contradict each other, but my last statement i.e. the person would not be able to pass the kindergarten is sufficient to indicate the intelligence of that person. If a person cannot even pass kindergarten, the question of him passing the first standard or 5th or 10th, does not arise.

### 3. Gradual prohibition of intoxicants

Another example of such verses is that related to gradual prohibition of intoxicants. The first revelation of the Qur'an to deal with intoxicants was the following verse from Surah Baqarah:

- "They ask thee concerning wine and gambling say: 'In them is great sin, and some profit, for men; but the sin is greater than the profit'." [Al-Qur'an 2:219] ۞۹

The next verse to be revealed regarding intoxicants is the following verse from Surah Nisa:

- "O ye who believe! Approach not prayers with a mind befogged, until ye can understand all that ye say" [Al-Qur'an 4:43]

The last verse to be revealed regarding intoxicants was the following verse from Surah Al-Maidah: "O ye who believe! Intoxicants and gambling, (dedication of) stones, and (divination by) arrows, are an abomination of Satan's handiwork; eschew such (abomination), that ye may prosper." [Al-Qur'an 5:90]

The Qur'an was revealed over a period of 22½ years. Many reforms that were brought about in the society were gradual. This was to facilitate the adoption of new laws by the people. An abrupt change in society always leads to rebellion and anarchy.

The prohibition of intoxicants was revealed in three stages. The first revelation only mentioned that in the intoxicants there is great sin and some profit but the sin is greater than the profit. The next revelation prohibited praying in an intoxicated state, indicating that one should not consume intoxicants during the day, since a Muslim has to pray five times a day. This verse does state that when one is not praying at night one is allowed to consume intoxicants. It means one may have or one may not have. The Qur'an does not comment on it. If this verse had mentioned that one is allowed to have intoxicants while not praying then there would have been a contradiction. Allah (swt) chose words appropriately. Finally the total prohibition of intoxicants at all times was revealed in Surah Maidah chapter 5 verse 90.

This clearly indicates that the three verses do not contradict each other. Had they been contradicting, it would not have been possible to follow all the three verses simultaneously. Since a Muslim is expected to follow each and every verse of the Qur'an, only by following the last verse i.e. of Surah Maidah (5:90), he simultaneously agrees and follows the previous two verses.

Suppose I say that I do not live in Los Angeles. Later I say that I do not live in California. Finally I say, I do not live in the United States of America. This does not imply that these three statements contradict each other. Each statement gives more information than the previous statement. The third statement includes the information contained in the first two statements. Thus, only by saying that I do not live in the United States of America, it is obvious, that I also do not live in California nor New York. Similarly since consuming alcohol is totally prohibited, it is obvious that praying in an intoxicated state is also prohibited and the information that in

intoxicants is "great sin and some profit for men; but the sin is greater than profit" also holds true.

#### 4. Qur'an does not contain any contradictions

The theory of abrogation does not imply that there is a contradiction in the Qur'an, since it is possible to follow all the verses of the Qur'an at the same time.

If there is a contradiction in the Qur'an, then it cannot be the word of Allah (swt).

- "Do they not consider the Qur'an (with care)? Had it been from other than Allah, they would surely have found therein much discrepancy (contradictions)."

[Al-Qur'an 4:82]

➤ **Question #10: Why do certain Surahs in the Qur'an begin with Alif Laam Meem, Haa Meem, Yaa Seen. What is the significance of such terms or phrases?**

**ANSWER:**

#### 1. Abbreviated Letters

*Alif Laam Meem, Ya Seen, Ha Meem',* etc. are known as *Al-Muqattaat* i.e. the abbreviated letters. There are 29 letters in the Arabic Alphabet (if *hamza* and *alif* are considered as two letters) and there are 29 *surahs* i.e. chapters in the Glorious Qur'an that have the abbreviated letters prefixed to them. These abbreviated letters sometimes occur alone, sometimes in a combination of two letters and sometimes in a combination of three, four or five letters.

#### 2. Meanings of these abbreviated letters

The meaning and purpose of these letters is uncertain. There have been a variety of explanations offered by Muslim scholars through the ages. A few among them are:

- I. These letters might be abbreviations for certain sentences and words for instance, *Alif Laam Meem* means *Ana-Alahu -a'Laam* or *Nun* meaning *Noor* (light), etc.
- II. These letters are not abbreviations but symbols and names of Allah or something else.
- III. These letters were used for rhyming.
- IV. These letters have some numerical significance as the Semitic letters also have numerical values.
- V. These letters were used to attract the attention of the Prophet (and later his audience).

Several volumes have been written on the significance of these abbreviations.

#### 3. Best explanation of abbreviated letters:

Of all the explanations given by various scholars, the one which is authentic and also supported by *Tafsir* of Ibne-Kathir, Zamakshari and Ibne-Taiymiyah is the following:

The human body is composed of various fundamental elements that are found in nature. Clay and dust are composed of the same fundamental elements. Yet it would be absurd to say that a human being is exactly the same as the dust.

We can all have access to the elements that are found in the human body, and add a few gallons of water, which is the constitution of the human body. We know the elements in the human body and yet we are at a loss when asked the secret of life.

Similarly the Qur'an addresses those people who reject its Divine authority. It tells them that this Qur'an, is in your own language, and over which the Arabs took pride. It is composed of the same letters that the Arabs used to express themselves most eloquently.

The Arabs were very proud of their language and Arabic was at its peak when the Qur'an was revealed. With the letters *Alif Laam Meem*, *Yaa Seen*, *Ha-Meem*, etc., (in English we would say A, B, C, D) the Qur'an challenges mankind to produce a *Surah* at least somewhat similar to the Qur'an in beauty and elegance, if they doubt its authenticity.

Initially, the Qur'an challenges all the men and jinn to produce a recital like the Qur'an and adds that they would not be able to do it even if they backed each other. This challenge is mentioned in Surah Isra chapter 17 verse 88 and in Surah Tur chapter 52 verse 34.

Later the Qur'an repeats the challenge in Surah Hud chapter 11 verse 13 by saying produce ten *surahs* like it and later in Surah Yunus chapter 10 verse 38 produce one *surah* like it and finally the easiest challenge is given in Surah Al-Baqarah chapter 2 verses 23 and 24.

"And if ye are in doubt as to what We have revealed from time to time to Our servant, then produce a *Surah* like thereunto; and call your witnesses or helpers (if there are any) besides Allah if your doubts are true. But if ye cannot – and of a surety ye cannot – then fear the fire whose fuel is men and stones – which is prepared for those who reject faith." [Al-Qur'an 2:23-24]

To compare the skill of two artisans, they must be given samples of the same raw material and their performance evaluated in performing the same task. If they are tailors they must be provided with the same fabrics. The raw materials of the Arabic language are these letters *Alif Laam Meem*, *Ya Seen* (in English it is A, B, C, D, etc.) The miraculous nature of the language of the Qur'an does not lie only in the fact that it is the Word of Allah, but also in the fact that although made up of the same letters in which the pagan Arabs took pride, it has not been rivalled.

The Arabs are noted for their rhetoric ability, eloquence and meaningful expression. Just as the constituents of the human body are known to us and can be obtained by us, the letters comprising the Qur'an, such as *Alif Laam Meem* are known to us, and used frequently to formulate words. Life cannot be created by us, even if we possess knowledge of the

constituents of the human body. Similarly we cannot capture the same eloquence and beauty of expression that we find in the Qur'an, despite knowing the letters that constitute the Qur'an. The Qur'an thus proves its Divine origin.

#### 4. Miraculous quality of Qur'an mentioned immediately after these broken letters

Therefore immediately after these broken letters are mentioned in the Qur'an, the following verses speak about the miracle of the Qur'an, and its authority e.g. in Surah Baqarah Chapter 2 verse 1-2:

*"Alif Laam Meem.*

*This is the Book; in it is guidance sure, without doubt, to those who fear Allah."* [Al-Qur'an 2:1-2]

➤ **Question #11: Qur'an says that Allah has made the earth for you as a carpet. This gives an indication that the earth is flat. Does this not contradict established modern science?**

#### ANSWER:

##### 1. Earth made as a carpet

The question refers to a verse from the Qur'an in Surah Nuh:

*"And Allah has made the earth for you as a carpet (spread out)." [Al-Qur'an 71:19]*

But the sentence in the above verse is not complete. It continues in the next verse, explaining the previous verse. It says:

*"That ye may go about therein, in spacious roads." [Al-Qur'an 71:20]*

A similar message is repeated in Surah TaHa:

*"He Who has made for you the earth like a carpet spread out; has enabled you to go about therein by roads (and channels)...." [Al-Qur'an 20:53]*

The surface of the earth i.e. earth's crust is less than 30 miles in thickness and is very thin as compared to the radius of the earth which is about 3750 miles. The deeper layers of the earth are very hot, fluid and hostile to any form of life. The earth's crust is a solidified shell on which we can live. The Qur'an rightly refers to it like a carpet spread out, so that we can travel along its roads and paths.



## 2. Carpet can also be spread on other than an absolute flat surface

Not a single verse of the Qur'an says that the earth is flat. The Qur'an only compares the earth's crust with a carpet. Some people seem to think that carpet can only be put on an absolute flat surface. It is possible to spread a carpet on a large sphere such as the earth. It can easily be demonstrated by taking a huge model of the earth's globe covering it with a carpet. Carpet is generally put on a surface, which is not very comfortable to walk on.

The Qur'an describes the earth crust as a carpet, without which human beings would not be able to survive because of the hot, fluid and hostile environment beneath it. The Qur'an is thus not only logical, it is mentioning a scientific fact that was discovered by geologists centuries later.

## 3. Earth has been spread out

Similarly, the Qur'an says in several verses that the earth has been spread out.

"And We have spread out the (spacious) earth: how excellently We do spread out!" [Al-Qur'an 51:48]

Similarly the Qur'an also mentions in several other verses that the earth is an expanse:

"Have We not made the earth as a wide expanse" "And the mountains as pegs?" [Al-Qur'an 78:6-7]

None of these verses of the Qur'an contain even the slightest implication that the earth is flat. It only indicates that the earth is spacious and the reason for this spaciousness of the earth is mentioned. The Glorious Qur'an says:

"O My servants who believe! truly, spacious is My Earth: therefore serve ye Me –(And Me alone)!" [Al-Qur'an 29:56]

Therefore none can give the excuse, that he could not do good and was forced to do evil because of the surroundings and circumstances.

## 4. Earth is geospherical in shape

The Qur'an mentions the actual shape of the earth in the following verse:

"And we have made the earth egg shaped". [Al-Qur'an 79:30]

The Arabic word *Dahaha* means egg shaped. It also means an expanse. *Dahaha* is derived from *Duhiya* which specifically refers to the egg of an ostrich which is geospherical in shape, exactly like the shape of the earth.

Thus the Qur'an and modern established science are in perfect harmony.

➤ **Question #12: The Qur'an says that only Allah knows the sex of the child in the womb of the mother but now science has advanced and we can easily determine the sex of the child in the womb by ultrasonography. Isn't this verse of the Qur'an conflicting with medical science?**

**ANSWER:**

Allah is Omnipotent and Omniscient. Allah has granted knowledge of certain things to humankind. But Allah has knowledge of the seen as well as the unseen.

**1. Allah has knowledge of all things**

Many people believe that the Qur'an claims that Allah alone knows the sex of the child in the mother's womb. The Glorious Qur'an says:

"Verily the knowledge of the Hour is with Allah (alone). It is He who sends down Rain, and He who knows what is in the wombs...." [Al-Qur'an 31:34]

A similar message is given in the following verse:

"Allah doth know what every female (womb) doth bear, By how much the wombs fall short (of their time or number) or do exceed. Every single thing is before His sight, in (due) proportion." [Al-Qur'an 13:8]

**2. Sex can be determined by Ultrasonography**

Today science has advanced and we can easily determine the sex of the child in the womb of a pregnant mother, using ultrasonography.

**3. The word 'sex' is not mentioned in the verse of the Qur'an**

It is true that many translations and commentaries of this verse of the Glorious Qur'an say that only Allah knows the sex of the child in the mother's womb. If you read the Arabic text of this verse, there is no Arabic word corresponding to the English word 'sex'. In fact the Qur'an says the knowledge of what is in the womb is with Allah alone. Many commentators have misunderstood it to mean only Allah knows the sex of the child in the womb, which is a mistake.

**4. No one besides Allah can determine the nature of the child**

This verse does not refer to the sex of the child in the womb but it refers to, how the child in the mother's womb will be. How will his nature be? Will he be a blessing or a curse to his parents? Will he be a boon or a bane to the society? Will he be good or evil? Will he go to heaven or hell? The complete knowledge of all things is with Allah alone. No scientist in the

world, no matter how advanced his equipment, will ever be able to accurately determine the knowledge of these things about the child in the mother's womb.

➤ **Question #13: According to the Qur'an when a man enters paradise, he will get hoor, i.e. beautiful maidens. What will a woman have when she enters paradise?**

**ANSWER:**

### **1. *Hoor* mentioned in the Qur'an**

The word *hoor* occurs in the Qur'an in no less than four different places:

(1) In Surah Dukhan chapter 44, verse 54

**"Moreover, We shall join them to companions With beautiful, big and lustrous eyes."**

[Al-Qur'an 44:54]

(2) In Surah Al-Tur chapter 52 verse 20

**"...And We shall join them to companions, with beautiful, big and lustrous eyes."** [Al-

Qur'an 52:20]

(3) In Surah Rahman chapter 55 verse 72

**"Companions restrained (as to their glances), in goodly pavilions."** [Al-Qur'an 55:72]

(4) In Surah Al-Waqiah chapter 56 verse 22

**"And (there will be) companions with beautiful, big and lustrous eyes."**

[Al-Qur'an 56:22]

### **2. *Hoor* Translated as Beautiful Maidens**

Many translators of the Qur'an have translated the word *hoor* as 'beautiful maidens' especially in the Urdu translations. If *hoor* means 'beautiful maidens' or girls, then they are meant only for the men. Hence, what will the women get if they enter Paradise?

### **3. Meaning of *Hoor***

The word *hoor* is actually the plural of *ahwar* (applicable to man) and of *haura* (applicable to woman) and signifies a person having eyes characterized by *hauar* a special quality bestowed upon a good soul, male or female in paradise and it denotes the intense whiteness of the white part of the spiritual eye.

The Qur'an describes in several other verses that in paradise you will have *azwaj* which mean a pair or spouse or companion which means you will have spouses or companions pure and holy (*mutaharratun* means pure, holy).

"But give glad tidings to those who believe and work righteousness, that their portion is gardens, beneath which rivers flow. Every time they are fed with fruits there from, they say: "Why, this is what we were fed with before", for they are given things in similitude;

and they have therein companions pure (and holy); and they abide therein (forever)".  
[Al-Qur'an 2:25]

"But those who believe and do deeds of righteousness, We shall soon admit to Gardens, with rivers flowing beneath – their eternal home; therein shall they have companions pure and holy: we shall admit them to shades, cool and ever deepening". [Al-Qur'an 4:57]

Therefore the word *hoor* has no specific gender. Mohammad Asad has translated the word *hoor* as spouse and Abdullah Yusuf Ali as companion. Therefore according to some scholars a man in paradise will have a *hoor* that is a beautiful maiden with beautiful big and lustrous eyes and a woman in paradise will get a man with beautiful big and lustrous eyes.

#### 4. Women will get something exceptional in Paradise

Many scholars say that in context, the word *hoor* used in the Qur'an refers only to ladies since gents are addressed. A reply that would be accepted by all types of people would rather be the answer given in the Hadith when a similar question was posed that if a man gets a *hoor*, a beautiful Maiden in Paradise, then what will the women get? The reply was that the women will get that which the heart has not desired for, the ear hasn't heard off and the eye hasn't seen, indicating that even the women will get something exceptional in Paradise.

➤ **Question #14: The Qur'an says that Allah has put a seal on the hearts of the Kuffar and they will not believe. Science tells us today that the brain is responsible for understanding and believing and not the heart. Isn't the Qur'an contradicting Science?**

**ANSWER:**

##### 1. Allah has set a seal on the heart of the *Kuffar*

The Glorious Qur'an says:

"As to those who reject Faith it is the same to them Whether thou warn them or do not warn them; They will not believe. "Allah hath set a seal on their hearts and on their hearing and on their eyes is a veil Great is the penalty they incur." [Al-Qur'an 2:6-7]

##### 2. The word *qalb* in Arabic means heart as well as intelligence

The Arabic word *qalb* used in these verses means the heart. It also means intelligence. Thus the above verses also mean that Allah has put a seal on the intelligence of the *kuffaars* (unbelievers) and they will not understand and believe.

## **2. In the Arabic language heart is also used as a centre of understanding**

In the Arabic language the word 'heart' is also used to connote one's centre of understanding.

## **3. Several words used in English language whose literal meaning is different**

Even in English language there are several words which are used to explain something, though the literal meaning of these words are different. Consider the following examples

a. Lunatic - Struck by the moon:

The word 'lunatic' literally means struck by the moon. Today people use the word lunatic for a person who is insane or mentally unstable. People very well know that a mad or a mentally unstable person is not struck by the moon. Yet even a medical doctor uses this word. This is normal in the evolution of a language.

b. Disaster – An evil star

The word 'disaster' literally means an evil star. Today the word disaster is used for a great or sudden misfortune or calamity. We know very well that a misfortune has nothing to do with an evil star.

c. Trivial – Three roads meet

The word 'trivial' literally means where three roads meet. Today the word 'trivial' is used for something of small nature or little importance. We know very well that if something is of small value it has nothing to do with where three roads meet.

d. Sunrise and Sunset

'Sunrise' literally means rising of the sun. Today when the word 'sunrise' is used most of the people know that the earth is rotating and is moving in relation to the sun. Most of us know that the sun does not rise during sunrise. However even an astronomer uses the word 'sunrise'. Similarly we know that during sunset, the sun does not actually set.

## **4. In the English language heart is the centre of love and emotion**

In the English language heart means an organ in the body which pumps blood. The same word heart is also used for the centre of thought, love and emotion. Today we know that brain is the centre of thought, love and emotion. Yet while expressing emotions a person is likely to say "I love you from the bottom of my heart". Imagine a scientist telling his wife, "I love you from the bottom of my heart" and the wife replies, "Don't you even know the basics of science, that the brain is responsible for the emotions and not the heart? In fact you should say I love you from the bottom of my brain."

## 5. Arabs know that the word heart in Arabic is also used for centre of thought and understanding

No Arab will ever ask the question as to why Allah has sealed the hearts of the *kafir* because he knows that in this context it refers to the centre of thought, understanding and emotions.

➤ **Question #15: If Allah has sealed the hearts of the Kuffar i.e. non-Muslims, then why are they to be blamed for not accepting Islam?**

### ANSWER:

#### 1. Allah has sealed the hearts of those who are continuously bent on rejecting the truth

Allah (swt) mentions in Surah Al Baqarah chapter 2 verses 6 and 7

"As to those who reject Faith, it is the same to them whether thou warn them or do not warn them; they will not believe. Allah hath set a seal on their hearts and on their hearing, and on their eyes is a veil; great is the penalty they (incur)." [Al-Qur'an 2:6-7]

These verses do not refer to common *Kuffar* who reject faith. The Arabic words used are *al-lazina kafaroo*, those who are bent on rejecting the truth. It will not make any difference to such people whether you warn them or not, they will not believe. Allah has set a seal on their hearts and on their hearing and on their eyes is a veil. It is not because Allah has set a seal on their hearts that these *kuffar* do not understand and believe, but it is the vice-versa. It is because these *kuffar* are bent on rejecting the truth and whether you warn them or not they will not believe, that Allah has set a seal on their hearts. Therefore Allah is not to blame, but these *kuffaar* who are bent on rejecting the faith are responsible.

#### 2. Example of teacher predicting a student will fail

Suppose an experienced teacher, before the final examinations, predicts that a particular student will fail in the exams, since the student is very mischievous, not attentive in class and does not do his homework. If after the student appears for the examination, he fails, who is to be blamed for the student failing: the teacher or the student? Just because the teacher predicted, it does not mean that the teacher is to be blamed but the student himself is responsible for his failure.

Similarly Allah (swt) knows in advance that there are some people who are bent on rejecting the faith and Allah has put a seal on their hearts. Thus these non-Muslims themselves are responsible for rejecting the faith and not Allah (swt).

➤ **Question #16: The Qur'an mentions in several places that the heavens and the earth were created in 6 days but in Surah Fussilat it says that the heavens and the earth were created in 8 days. Isn't this a contradiction? The same verse also says that the earth was created in 6 days and then later on the heavens were created in 2 days. This is against the Big-Bang theory that the heavens and the earth were created simultaneously.**

## **ANSWER:**

### **1. Heavens and the Earth created in Six days**

We do agree that the Qur'an says that the heavens and the earth were created in 6 days i.e. 6 epochs and it is mentioned in Surah Al A'raf chapter 7 verse 54 Surah Yunus chapter 10 verse 3 Surah Hud chapter 11 verse 7 Surah Al Furqan chapter 25 verse 59 Surah Al Sajdah chapter 32 verse 4 Surah Qaf chapter 50 verse 38 Surah Al Hadid chapter 57 verse 4

The verses of the Qur'an which according to you say that the heavens and the earth were created in 8 days are Surah Fussilat chapter 41 verses 9 to 12

"Say: Is it that ye deny Him Who created the earth in two days? And do ye join equals With him? He is the Lord of (all) the Worlds; He set on the (earth) mountains standing firm, High above it, and bestowed blessings on the earth, and measured therein all things to give them nourishment in due proportion, In four days, in accordance with (the needs of) Those who seek (sustenance)." Moreover, He Comprehended in His design the sky, and it had been (as) smoke. He said to it and to the earth. "Come ye together, willingly or unwillingly. They said: "We do come (Together), in willing obedience." So He completed them as seven firmaments in two days and He assigned to each heaven its duty and command and We adorned the lower heaven with lights, and (provided it) with guard. Such is the decree of (Him) the exalted in might, full of knowledge." [Al-Qur'an 41:9-12]

On the face of it, it seems that these verses of the Qur'an give the initial impression that the heavens and the earth were created in 8 days.

Allah says in the beginning of this verse that those who exploit this information contained in this passage to raise doubts about its authenticity are equally interested in promulgating blasphemy and denying His unity. Allah is telling us that in course of time, there will emerge unbelievers who will make use of this apparent contradiction.

### **2. Summa means moreover**

If you analyze these verses carefully, it speaks about 2 different creations: the earth and the heaven. The earth excluding the mountains was created in 2 days and the mountains were set

on the earth standing firm and blessed and measured its sustenance in 4 days. Therefore the earth along with the mountains was created in 6 days according to verse 9 and 10. Verse 11 and 12 says, moreover the heavens were created in 2 days. The Arabic word used in the beginning of verse 11 of Surah Fussilat is *summa* which means; 'then' or 'moreover'. There are certain Qur'anic translations, which have, used 'then' for the word *summa* which, indicates 'afterwards'. If 'then' is wrongly used for *summa* then the total of the creation of heaven and earth will be 8 days which will conflict with other verses of the Qur'an which says heavens and earth were created in 6 days and will also conflict with the Big Bang Theory as well as the verse of the Qur'an Surah Al Ambiya chapter 21 verse 30 which says that heavens and the earth were created simultaneously.

Therefore the correct translation of the word *summa* in this verse would be 'moreover'. Abdullah Yusuf Ali has rightly translated the word *summa* or moreover which clearly gives an indication that while the earth along with the mountains, etc. was created in 6 days simultaneously the heavens were created in 2 days. Therefore the total does not come to 8 days but 6 days.

If a builder says that he will construct a 10 storey building and surrounding compound wall in 6 months and after completion of his project he gives a more detailed account saying that the basement of the building was built in 2 months and the 10 storey took 4 months and simultaneously, while the basement and the building was being constructed, he also constructed the surrounding of the building along with the compound wall which took 2 months. Therefore both his first and second descriptions are not contradicting but the second statement gives a more detailed account for the construction.

### **3. Heavens and the Earth created simultaneously**

The Qur'an describe the creation of the universe in several places, sometimes it says the heavens and the earth (7:54, 10:3, 11:7, 25:59, 32:4, 50:38, 57:4) while in other places it says earth and the heaven (49:9-12, 2:29, 20:4) thus further supplementing the verse of Surah Al Ambiya chapter 21 verse 30 which speaks about the Big-Bang and that the heavens and the earth were created simultaneously.

Similarly in Surah Al-Baqara chapter 2 verse 29

"It is He Who hath created for you all things that are on earth; Then He turned to the heaven and made them into seven firmaments. And of all things He hath perfect knowledge." [Al-Qur'an 2:29]

"It is who has created for you all things on the earth *summa* simultaneously made the heaven into seven firmaments".



Here also if you wrongly translate *summa* as 'then' only then would this verse contradict the Big-bang theory and other verses of the Qur'an. Therefore the correct translation of the word *summa* is 'moreover' or 'simultaneously'.

➤ **Question #17: At one place the Qur'an mentions that man is created from sperm and in another place it mentions that man is created from dust. Are these two verses not contradicting? How can you scientifically prove that man is created from dust?**

**ANSWER:**

### **1. Man created from sperm and dust**

The Qur'an refers to the lowly beginnings of a human being from a drop of sperm, in several verses including the following verse from Surah Al-Qiyamah:

"Was he not a drop of sperm emitted (in lowly form)"? [Al-Qur'an 75:37]

The Qur'an also mentions in several places that human beings were created from dust. The following verse makes a reference to the origin of human beings:

"(Consider) that We created you out of dust". [Al-Qur'an 22:5]

We now know that all the elements present in the human body (i.e. the constituent elements of the human body), are all present in the earth in small or great quantities. This is the scientific explanation for the Qur'anic verse that says that man was created from dust.

In certain verses, the Qur'an says that man was created from sperm, while in certain other verses it says that man was created from dust. However this is not a contradiction. Contradiction means statements, which are opposite or conflicting and both cannot be true simultaneously.

### **2. Man created from water**

In certain places the Qur'an also says that man was created from water. For instance in Surah Al-Furqan it says:

"It is He Who has created man from water". [Al-Qur'an 25:54]

Science has proved all the three statements to be correct. Man has been created from sperm, dust as well as water.

### **3. It is not a Contradiction but a Contradistinction**

Suppose I say that in order to make a cup of tea one needs water. One also needs tea-leaves or tea powder. The two statements are not contradictory since both water and tea leaves are required in order to make a cup of tea. Furthermore if I want sweet tea I can even add sugar.

Thus there is no contradiction in the Qur'an when it says that man is created from sperm, dust and water. It is not a contradiction but a contradistinction. Contradistinction means speaking about two different concepts on the same subject without conflict. For instance if I say that the man is always truthful and a habitual liar, it is a contradiction, but if I say that a man is always honest, kind and loving, then it is a contradistinction.

➤ **Question #18: It is mentioned in one verse of the Qur'an that Allah is the Lord of two Easts and two Wests. How can you explain this verse of the Qur'an scientifically?**

**ANSWER:**

### **1. Qur'an mentions Allah is the Lord of two Easts and two Wests**

The verse of the Qur'an which refers to Allah being the Lord of two easts and two wests is the following verse from Surah Ar-Rahman:

"(He is) Lord of the two Easts and Lord of the two Wests:" [Al-Qur'an 55:17]

In the original Arabic script, the words east and west have been used in the dual form. It implies that Allah is the Lord of two easts and two wests.

### **2. Allah is the Lord of both the extremes of East and West**

The science of geography tells us that the sun rises from the east, but the point of sunrise keeps shifting throughout the year. Only on two days of the year known as 'equinox', does the sun rise exactly from due east. On the remaining days, it rises either from a little north or a little south of due east. During summer solstice the sun rises from one extreme of the east and during winter solstice it rises from the other extreme. Similarly, the sun sets in one extreme of the west in summer solstice. It sets in the other extreme of the west in winter solstice.

This phenomenon can be easily seen in Bombay or any other city, by people living in certain areas, or in tall skyscraper buildings, from where the rising or setting of sun can be seen. They are able to notice that during the summer solstice the sun rises from one extreme of east and during winter solstice it rises from the other extreme of east. In short, throughout the year, the sun keeps rising from different points of the east and sets on different points of the west. Thus when the Qur'an refers to Allah as the Lord of two easts and two wests, it means that Allah is the Lord of both the extremes of east and both the extremes of west.

### **3. Allah is the Lord of all the points of the East and West**

Arabic language has two types of plurals. One is the dual plural i.e. the plural that implies the existence of two. The other is the plural for more than two, i.e. three and above. In Surah Rahman verse 17 the Arabic words used are *mashriqaini* and *magribaini* which are in dual plural and therefore imply two easts and two wests.

Consider the following verse of the Qur'an:

"Now I do call to witness the Lord of all points in the East and the West."  
[Al-Qur'an 70:40]

The Arabic words for east and west used in this verse are *mashaariqi* and *magharibi'* which are plurals that imply the existence of more than two.

We can thus conclude that the Qur'an refers to Allah being the Lord of all the points in the east and all the points of the west, as well as the Lord of both the extreme points of east and both the extreme points of west.

➤ **Question #19: A particular verse of the Qur'an says that one day in the sight of Allah is equal to 1000 years. In another verse of the Qur'an it says that one day is equal to 50,000 years. Isn't the Qur'an contradicting itself?**

**ANSWER:**

### **1. Time of Allah is incomparable to earthly time**

The Qur'an says in two verses, (22:47 and 32:5), that the measure of one day in the sight of Allah is equal to 1,000 years of our reckoning. In another verse (70:4) it says that the measure of one day in the sight of Allah is equal to 50,000 years of our reckoning.

These verses generally mean that the time of Allah (swt) is incomparable to the earthly time. The examples given are of one thousand years and fifty thousand years of the earthly time. In other words thousands of years or a very, very long time of the earth a day in the sight of Allah is equal to:

### **2. *Yaum* also means Period oV**

The Arabic word used in all these three verses is *yaum*, which, besides meaning a day also means a long period, or an epoch. If you translate the word *yaum* correctly as 'period' there will be no confusion.

A) The verse from Surah Hajj reads as:

"Yet they ask thee to hasten on the Punishment! but Allah will not fail in His promise. Verily a Day in the sight of thy Lord is like a thousand years of your reckoning".  
[Al-Qur'an 22:47]

When the unbelievers asked to hasten the punishment the Qur'an says Allah will not fail in His promise. Verily a period in the sight of Allah is like a thousand years of your reckoning.

B) The verse from Surah Al-Sajdah says:

"He rules (all) affairs from the heavens to the earth: in the end will (all affairs) go up? To Him, on a Day, the space whereof will be (as) a thousand years of your reckoning".  
[Al-Qur'an 32:5]

This verse indicates that a period required for all the affairs to go up to Allah (swt), is a thousand years of our reckoning.

C) A verse from Surah Al-Maarij says:

"The angels and the spirit ascend unto Him in a Day the measure whereof is (as) fifty thousand years". [Al-Qur'an 70:4]

This verse means that the period required for angels and the spirits to ascend unto Allah (swt) is fifty thousand years.

D) The period for two different acts need not be the same. For example the period required for me to travel to destination 'A' say Vashi is one hour and the period required for me to travel to destination 'B' i.e. Kashmir is 50 hours. This does not indicate that I am making two contradictory statements.

Thus the verses of the Qur'an not only do not contradict each other, they are also in perfect harmony with established modern scientific facts.

➤ **Question #20: The Qur'an in several places says that Iblis was an angel, but in Surah Kahf it says that Iblis was a Jinn. Isn't this a contradiction in the Qur'an?**

**ANSWER:**

### **1. Incidence of *Iblis* and Angels mentioned in the Qur'an**

The story of Adam and *Iblis* is mentioned in the Qur'an in various places in which Allah (swt) says, "We said to the angels bow down to Adam: and they bowed down: not so *Iblis*". This is mentioned in:

Surah Al Baqarah chapter 2 verse 43 Surah Al 'Araf chapter 7 verse 17 Surah Al Hijr chapter 15 verses 28-31 Surah Al Isra chapter 17 verse 61 Surah Ta Ha chapter 20 verse 116 Surah Sad chapter 38 verses 71-74 But in Surah Al Kahf chapter 18 verse 50 the Qur'an says:

"Behold! We said to the angels, "Bow down to Adam." they bowed down except *Iblis* He was one of the *Jinns*." [Al-Qur'an 18:50]

## 2. Arabic Rule Of Tagleeb

The English translation of the first part of the verse 'We said to the angels bow down to Adam: they bowed down except *Iblis*', gives us the impression that *Iblis* was an angel. The Qur'an was revealed in Arabic. In Arabic grammar there is a rule known as Tagleeb, according to which, if the majority is addressed, even the minority is included. If for example, I address a class containing 100 students of whom 99 are boys and one is a girl, and if I say in Arabic that the boys should stand up, it includes the girl as well. I need not mention her separately. Similarly in the Qur'an, when Allah addressed the angels, even *Iblis* was present, but it is not required that he be mentioned separately. Therefore according to that sentence *Iblis* may be an angel or may not be an angel, but we come to know from Surah Al Kahf chapter 18 verse 50 that *Iblis* was a *Jinn*. No where does the Qur'an say *Iblis* was an angel. Therefore there is no contradiction in the Qur'an.

## 3. Jinns have free will and can disobey Allah

Secondly, *Jinns* have a free will and may or may not obey Allah, but angels have no free will and always obey Allah. Therefore the question of an angel disobeying Allah does not arise. This further supplements that *Iblis* was a *Jinn* and not an angel.

➤ **Question #21: According to Arun Shourie there is a mathematical error in the Qur'an. In chapter 4 verses 11 and 12 when you add up the different parts of inheritance given to the heirs, it is more than one. Therefore the author of the Qur'an does not know mathematics.**

### ANSWER:

The Qur'an mentions about inheritance in many places, in Surah Al Baqarah chapter 2 verse 180 Surah Al Baqarah chapter 2 verse 240 Surah Al Nisa chapter 4 verses 7 to 9 Surah Al Nisa chapter 4 verses 19 and 33 Surah Al Ma'idah chapter 5 verses 105 and 108 Regarding the share of inheritance it is clearly given in Surah Nisa chapter 4 verse 11, 12 and 176.

Let us examine the verses quoted by Arun Shourie, i.e. Surah Nisa chapter 4 verses 11 and 12:

"Allah (swt) (thus) directs you as regards your children's (inheritance): to the male, a portion equal to that of two females: if only daughters, two or more, their share is two-thirds of the inheritance; if only one, her share is a half. For parents, a sixth share of the inheritance to each, if the deceased left children; if no children, and the parents are the (only) heirs, the mother has a third; if the deceased left brothers (or sisters) the mother has a sixth. (The distribution in all cases is) after the payment of legacies and debts. Ye know not whether your parents or your children are nearest to you in benefit. These are settled portions ordained by Allah; and Allah is All-Knowing, All-Wise."

"In what your wives leave, your share is a half, if they leave no child; but if they leave child, ye get a fourth; after payment of legacies and debts. In what ye leave, their share is a fourth, if ye leave no child; but if ye leave a child, they get an eighth; after payment of legacies and debts." [Al-Qur'an 4:11-12]

Islam explains the law of inheritance in great detail. The broad and basic outline is given in the Qur'an and the minute details are given in the *Ahadith* i.e. the tradition and sayings of the Prophet (pbuh).

A person can spend his full life only on the research of the Islamic law of inheritance with its various permutations and combinations. Arun Shourie expects to know the law only by superficially reading two verses of the Qur'an without knowing the criteria.

It is similar to a person who wants to solve a mathematical equation but does not know the basic rule of mathematics, i.e. BODMAS which says that in a mathematical equation, irrespective of which mathematical sign appears first, you will first solve BODMAS: 1st Brackets Off, 2nd Division, 3rd Multiplication, 4th Addition and 5th Subtraction. If Arun Shourie does not know mathematics and first does multiplication then subtraction, then brackets off, then division and finally addition, the answer that he will obtain is bound to be wrong.

Similarly, when the Qur'an mentions the law of inheritance in Surah Nisa chapter 4 verses 11 and 12, even though the children's share is mentioned first and then that of the parents and spouses, according to the law of inheritance in Islam after paying off the debts and liabilities first, the share is given to the spouses and the parents depending on whether the deceased has left children or not, and whatever portion of wealth is remaining is divided between the sons and the daughters according to their respective shares.

So where does the question arise of the total coming to more than one? So it is not Allah who does not know mathematics but it is Arun Shourie himself who is ignorant about mathematics.

➤ **Question #22: The Qur'an says several times that Allah is most Merciful and Forgiving but also says many times that He gives severe punishment. Is He Forgiving or Revengeful?**

**ANSWER:**

### **1. Allah is most Merciful**

The Qur'an says several times that Allah is the most Merciful. In fact all the 114 Surahs i.e. chapters of the Glorious Qur'an except for Surah Taubah chapter 9, begin with the beautiful formula, *Bismillah-hir-Rahman-nir-Rahim*, which means, "In the name of Allah, Most Gracious, Most Merciful".

## **2. Allah is Forgiving**

The Glorious Qur'an mentions in several verses including Surah Nisa, chapter 4 verse 25 and Surah Maidah, chapter 5 verse 74:

"And Allah is Oft-Forgiving, Most Merciful."

## **3. Allah gives severe punishment to the deserving**

Allah besides being Merciful and Forgiving is also strict in giving punishment to the deserving. The Qur'an mentions in several verses that Allah will give severe punishment to the unbelievers and rejecters of faith. He will give punishment to all those who disobey Him. Several verses of the Qur'an describe the various types of severe punishment that Allah will give in hell to all those who disobey.

"Those who reject our Signs, we shall soon cast into the Fire; as often as their skins Are roasted through, we shall change them for fresh skins, that they may taste the penalty: for Allah is Exalted in Power, Wise". [Al-Qur'an 4:56]

## **4. Allah is Just**

The question is, whether Allah is forgiving or revengeful? An important point to be noted is that Allah besides being Merciful and Forgiving, He also has to give severe punishment to the deserving wicked or evil people, because He is also Just. The Qur'an mentions in Surah Nisa:

"Allah is never unjust in the least degree". [Al-Qur'an 4:40]

It is further mentioned in Surah Al-Anbiya:

"We shall set up scales of justice for the day of Judgement, so that not a soul will be dealt with unjustly in the least. And if there be (no more than) the weight of a mustard seed, we will bring it (to account): and enough are we to take account". [Al-Qur'an 21:47]

## **5. Example: Teacher forgives a student who copies in the examination**

If during an examination, a student copies and the teacher who supervises in the examination catches the student red-handed, the teacher says that he is very merciful and kind and forgives him and allows him to continue copying. Those students who have worked hard for the examination will not call the teacher merciful and kind but will call him unjust. This merciful act of the teacher will encourage the other students to also copy. If all the teachers are merciful and kind and allow the students to copy then no student will ever study for examinations and all will pass with flying colours by copying. The theoretical results of the examinations will be excellent in which all the students will pass with first class and distinction but practically these students will be a failure in life. The whole purpose of the examination would be defeated.

## 6. This Life is a Test for the Hereafter

The life in this world is a test for the Hereafter. The Qur'an says in Surah Al Mulk:

"He who created Death and Life, that He may try which of you is best in deed; and He is the Exalted in Might, Oft-Forgiving". [Al-Qur'an 67:2]

## 7. If Allah forgives all and punishes none, who will obey him?

If Allah (swt) forgives each and every human being and punishes no one, then why should the human beings obey the command of Allah (swt)? I do agree that no one will go to hell, but this world would become hell to live in. If all human beings are going to go to heaven then what is the purpose and use of the human beings to come to this world, this life cannot be called a test for the hereafter.

## 8. Allah only forgives if a person repents

Allah (swt) only forgives if a person repents. The Qur'an says in Surah Al-Zumar, chapter 39 verse 53-55:

"Say: 'O my servants who have transgressed against their souls! Despair not of the Mercy of Allah: for Allah forgives all sins for He is Oft-Forgiving, Most Merciful."

"Turn ye to your Lord (in repentance) and bow to His (will), before the penalty comes on you - after that ye shall not be helped."

"And follow the best of (the courses) revealed to you from your Lord, before the penalty comes on you - of a sudden, while ye perceive not!" [Al-Qur'an 39:53-55]

There are four criteria for repentance: First, agree that the act is wrong. Secondly, stop it immediately. Thirdly, never do it again in future. And lastly, compensate for the loss if caused to anyone.

➤ **Question # 23: why is a man allowed to have more than one wife in Islam? i.e. why is polygamy allowed in Islam?**

**ANSWER:**

### Definition of Polygamy

**1.** Polygamy means a system of marriage whereby one person has more than one spouse. Polygamy can be of two types. One is polygyny where a man marries more than one woman, and the other is polyandry, where a woman marries more than one man. In Islam, limited polygyny is permitted; whereas polyandry is completely prohibited.



Now coming to the original question, why is a man allowed to have more than one wife?

## **2. The Quran is the only religious scripture in the world that says, "marry only one".**

The Quran is the only religious book, on the face of this earth, that contains the phrase "marry only one". There is no other religious book that instructs men to have only one wife. In none of the other religious scriptures, whether it be the Vedas, the Ramayan, the Mahabharat, the Geeta, the Talmud or the Bible does one find a restriction on the number of wives. According to these scriptures one can marry as many as one wishes. It was only later, that the Hindu priests and the Christian Church restricted the number of wives to one.

Many Hindu religious personalities, according to their scriptures, had multiple wives. King Dashrat, the father of Rama, had more than one wife. Krishna had several wives.

In earlier times, Christian men were permitted as many wives as they wished, since the Bible puts no restriction on the number of wives. It was only a few centuries ago that the Church restricted the number of wives to one.

Polygyny is permitted in Judaism. According to Talmudic law, Abraham had three wives, and Solomon had hundreds of wives. The practice of polygyny continued till Rabbi Gershom ben Yehudah (960 C.E to 1030 C.E) issued an edict against it. The Jewish Sephardic communities living in Muslim countries continued the practice till as late as 1950, until an Act of the Chief Rabbinate of Israel extended the ban on marrying more than one wife.

## **3.Hindus are more polygynous than Muslims**

The report of the Committee of The Status of Woman in Islam, published in 1975 mentions on page numbers 66 and 67 that the percentage of polygamous marriages between the years 1951 and 1961 was 5.06% among the Hindus and only 4.31% among the Muslims. According to Indian law only Muslim men are permitted to have more than one wife. It is illegal for any non-Muslim in India to have more than one wife. Despite it being illegal, Hindus have more multiple wives as compared to Muslims. Earlier, there was no restriction even on Hindu men with respect to the number of wives allowed. It was only in 1954, when the Hindu Marriage Act was passed that it became illegal for a Hindu to have more than one wife. At present it is the Indian Law that restricts a Hindu man from having more than one wife and not the Hindu scriptures.

Let us now analyze why Islam allows a man to have more than one wife.

#### 4. Quran permits limited polygyny

As I mentioned earlier, Quran is the only religious book on the face of the earth that says “marry only one”. The context of this phrase is the following verse from Surah Nisa of the Glorious Quran:

"Marry women of your choice, two, or three, or four; but if ye fear that ye shall not be able to deal justly (with them), then only one." [Al-Quran 4:3]

Before the Quran was revealed, there was no upper limit for polygyny and many men had scores of wives, some even hundreds. Islam put an upper limit of four wives. Islam gives a man permission to marry two, three or four women, only on the condition that he deals justly with them.

In the same chapter i.e. Surah Nisa verse 129 says:

"Ye are never able to be fair and just as between women...." [Al-Quran 4:129]

Therefore polygyny is not a rule but an exception. Many people are under the misconception that it is compulsory for a Muslim man to have more than one wife.

Broadly, Islam has five categories of Dos and Don'ts:

- i. *Fard* i.e. compulsory or obligatory
- ii. *Mustahab* i.e. recommended or encouraged
- iii. *Mubah* i.e. permissible or allowed
- iv. *Makruh* i.e. not recommended or discouraged
- v. *Haraam* i.e. prohibited or forbidden

Polygyny falls in the middle category of things that are permissible. It cannot be said that a Muslim who has two, three or four wives is a better Muslim as compared to a Muslim who has only one wife.

#### 5. Average life span of females is more than that of males

By nature males and females are born in approximately the same ratio. A female child has more immunity than a male child. A female child can fight the germs and diseases better than the

male child. For this reason, during the pediatric age itself there are more deaths among males as compared to the females.

During wars, there are more men killed as compared to women. More men die due to accidents and diseases than women. The average life span of females is more than that of males, and at any given time one finds more widows in the world than widowers.

#### **6. India has more male population than female due to female feticide and infanticide**

India is one of the few countries, along with the other neighboring countries, in which the female population is less than the male population. The reason lies in the high rate of female infanticide in India, and the fact that more than one million female fetuses are aborted every year in this country, after they are identified as females. If this evil practice is stopped, then India too will have more females as compared to males.

#### **7. World female population is more than male population**

In the USA, women outnumber men by 7.8 million. New York alone has one million more females as compared to the number of males, and of the male population of New York one-third are gays i.e sodomites. The U.S.A as a whole has more than twenty-five million gays. This means that these people do not wish to marry women. Great Britain has four million more females as compared to males. Germany has five million more females as compared to males. Russia has nine million more females than males. God alone knows how many million more females there are in the whole world as compared to males.

#### **8. Restricting each and every man to have only one wife is not practical**

Even if every man got married to one woman, there would still be more than thirty million females in U.S.A who would not be able to get husbands (considering that America has twenty five million gays). There would be more than four million females in Great Britain, 5 million females in Germany and nine million females in Russia alone who would not be able to find a husband.

Suppose my sister happens to be one of the unmarried women living in USA, or suppose your sister happens to be one of the unmarried women in USA. The only two options remaining for her are that she either marries a man who already has a wife or becomes public property. There is no other option. All those who are modest will opt for the first.

In Western society, it is common for a man to have mistresses and/or multiple extra-marital affairs, in which case, the woman leads a disgraceful, unprotected life. The same society,

however, cannot accept a man having more than one wife, in which women retain their honorable, dignified position in society and lead a protected life.

Thus the only two options before a woman who cannot find a husband is to marry a married man or to become public property. Islam prefers giving women the honorable position by permitting the first option and disallowing the second.

There are several other reasons, why Islam has permitted limited polygyny, but it is mainly to protect the modesty of women.

**Question # 24: How can Islam be called the religion of peace when it was spread by the sword?**

**ANSWER:**

It is a common complaint among some non-Muslims that Islam would not have millions of adherents all over the world, if it had not been spread by the use of force. The following points will make it clear, that far from being spread by the sword, it was the inherent force of truth, reason and logic that was responsible for the rapid spread of Islam.

**1. Islam means peace.**

Islam comes from the root word *salaam*, which means peace. It also means submitting ones will to Allah (swt). Thus Islam is a religion of peace, which is acquired by submitting one's will to the will of the Supreme Creator, Allah (swt).

**2. Sometimes force has to be used to maintain peace.**

Each and every human being in this world is not in favor of maintaining peace and harmony. There are many, who would disrupt it for their own vested interests. Sometimes force has to be used to maintain peace. It is precisely for this reason that we have the police who use force against criminals and anti-social elements to maintain peace in the country. Islam promotes peace. At the same time, Islam exhorts its followers to fight where there is oppression. The fight against oppression may, at times, require the use of force. In Islam force can only be used to promote peace and justice.

**3. Opinion of historian De Lacy OLeary.**

The best reply to the misconception that Islam was spread by the sword is given by the noted historian De Lacy OLeary in the book "Islam at the cross road" (Page 8):

"History makes it clear however, that the legend of fanatical Muslims sweeping through the world and forcing Islam at the point of the sword upon conquered races is one of the most fantastically absurd myth that historians have ever repeated."

#### **4. Muslims ruled Spain for 800 years.**

Muslims ruled Spain for about 800 years. The Muslims in Spain never used the sword to force the people to convert. Later the Christian Crusaders came to Spain and wiped out the Muslims. There was not a single Muslim in Spain who could openly give the 'adhan', that is the call for prayers.

#### **5. 14 million Arabs are Coptic Christians.**

Muslims were the lords of Arabia for 1400 years. For a few years the British ruled, and for a few years the French ruled. Overall, the Muslims ruled Arabia for 1400 years. Yet today, there are 14 million Arabs who are Coptic Christians i.e. Christians since generations. If the Muslims had used the sword there would not have been a single Arab who would have remained a Christian.

#### **6. More than 80% non-Muslims in India.**

The Muslims ruled India for about a thousand years. If they wanted, they had the power of converting each and every non-Muslim of India to Islam. Today more than 80% of the population of India are non-Muslims. All these non-Muslim Indians are bearing witness today that Islam was not spread by the sword.

#### **7. Indonesia and Malaysia.**

Indonesia is a country that has the maximum number of Muslims in the world. The majority of people in Malaysia are Muslims. May one ask, "Which Muslim army went to Indonesia and Malaysia?"

#### **8. East Coast of Africa.**

Similarly, Islam has spread rapidly on the East Coast of Africa. One may again ask, if Islam was spread by the sword, "Which Muslim army went to the East Coast of Africa?"

#### **9. Thomas Carlyle.**

The famous historian, Thomas Carlyle, in his book "Heroes and Hero worship", refers to this misconception about the spread of Islam: "The sword indeed, but where will you get your sword? Every new opinion, at its starting is precisely in a minority of one. In one man's head alone. There it dwells as yet. One man alone of the whole world believes it, there is one man against all men. That he takes a sword and try to propagate with that, will do little for him. You must get your sword! On the whole, a thing will propagate itself as it can."

### **10. No compulsion in religion.**

With which sword was Islam spread? Even if Muslims had it they could not use it to spread Islam because the Quran says in the following verse:

"Let there be no compulsion in religion: Truth stands out clear from error"  
[Al-Quran 2:256]

### **11. Sword of the Intellect.**

It is the sword of intellect. The sword that conquers the hearts and minds of people. The Quran says in Surah Nahl, chapter 16 verse 125:

"Invite (all) to the way of thy Lord with wisdom and beautiful preaching; and argue with them in ways that are best and most gracious." [Al-Quran 16:125]

### **12. Increase in the world religions from 1934 to 1984.**

An article in Readers Digest Almanac, year book 1986, gave the statistics of the increase of percentage of the major religions of the world in half a century from 1934 to 1984. This article also appeared in The Plain Truth magazine. At the top was Islam, which increased by 235%, and Christianity had increased only by 47%. May one ask, which war took place in this century which converted millions of people to Islam?

### **13. Islam is the fastest growing religion in America and Europe.**

Today the fastest growing religion in America is Islam. The fastest growing religion in Europe is Islam. Which sword is forcing people in the West to accept Islam in such large numbers?

### **14. Dr. Joseph Adam Pearson.**

Dr. Joseph Adam Pearson rightly says, "People who worry that nuclear weaponry will one day fall in the hands of the Arabs, fail to realize that the Islamic bomb has been dropped already, it fell the day MUHAMMED (pbuh) was born".

**REFERED BOOKS:**

- "History of the bible" by Wesley Ringer
- "Allah's covenant" by Dr. Bilal Philips
- Jesus Prophet of Islam by AthauhRahman & Ahmed Thomson
- "Over One Hundred Texts From The Bible That Show that Babies are Born Innocent and Without Sin" by Alfred T. Overstreet
- "101 contradictions in the bible" & Bible denies divinity of Jesus by Shabir Ally
- Common Questions asked by Non Muslims about Islam by Dr. Zakir Naik